



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

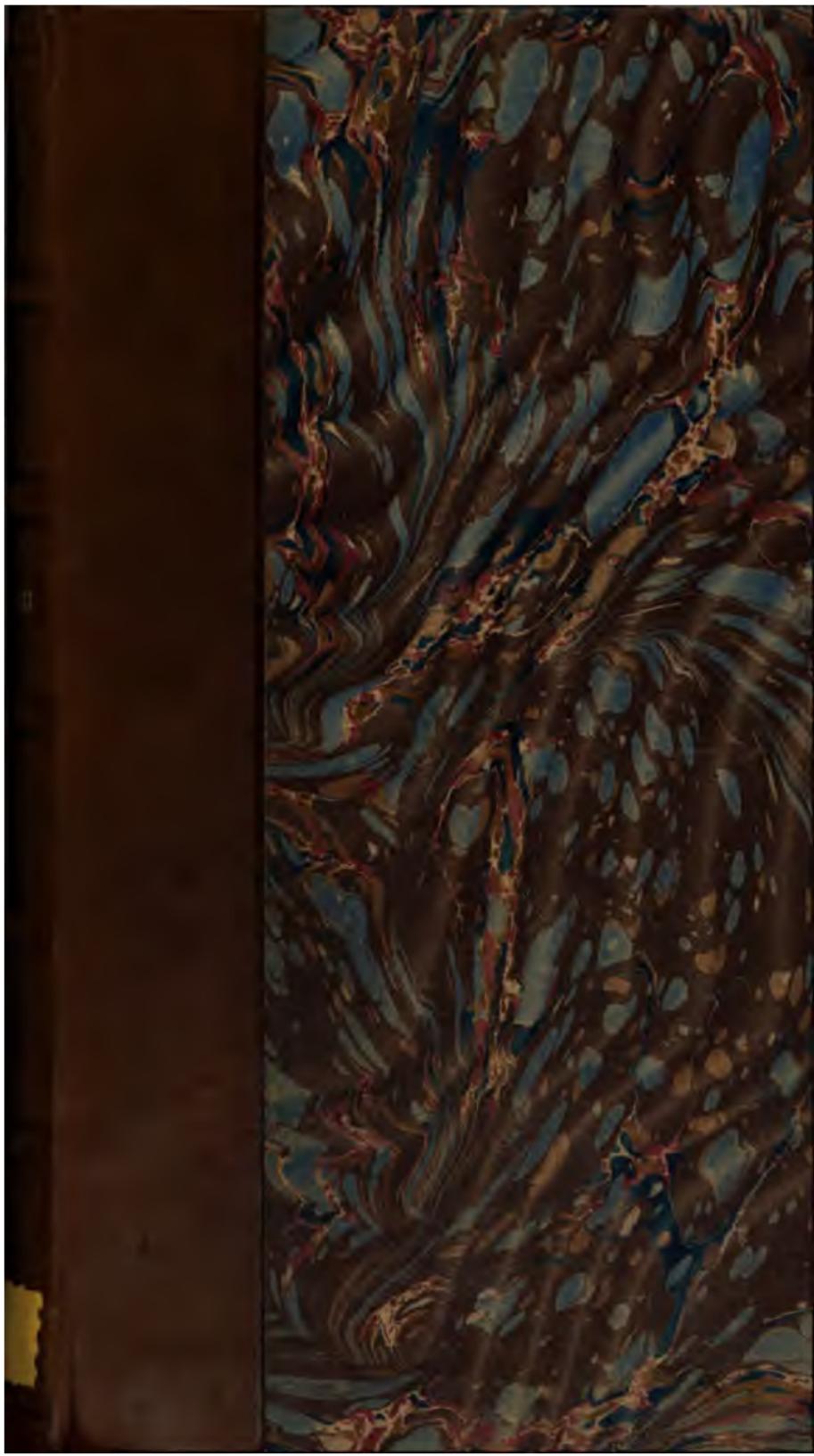
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



316 ~~6/16/13~~

BL from last

3078 f. 16

161



The ITALIAN MASTER;

O R,

RULES for the ITALIAN Tongue;

TEACHING TO

READ, WRITE, and SPEAK that
Language in a Month's Time,

By an EASY and FAMILIAR METHOD,
hitherto unpractised:

With COMPOSITIONS or LESSONS
adapted to the RULES;

Also a TABLE of VERBS, by which
all VERBS REGULAR and IRREGULAR,
may be readily conjugated.

By Mr. CHENEAU, of PARIS,
Many Years Professor of Languages in LONDON.

New first Published from the Author's MS. Copy.

E T O N:

Printed by J. POTE, Bookseller; also for J.
HODGES, Bookseller near London-Bridge, and
JOHN and JAMES RIVINGTON, in St. Paul's
Church-Yard.

MDCCLIV.





Advertisement.

IT being my intent to publish my RULES for the FRENCH and ITALIAN Languages at the same time, the Preface I have prefixed to the former, does make it needless for me to add more on this present Publication: The same Instructions and Directions necessary for the Learner in his Studies will be found also in the several Parts of this Book, and the proper Use of these will greatly promote a speedy Knowledge of the Italian Tongue.

IT is for this Reason I shall trouble neither the Reader or myself farther on this Occasion, and tho' from long Experience I am convinced of the Benefit that will accrue to the Learner by following the Rules here laid down, I desire nor pretend to other Merit in preparing these Grammars for the Press, than an honest Intention to assist the diligent Learner, and promote a general Good, by removing the Difficulties that have too long obstructed the Progress of Learning, and a ready and free Communi-

Advertisement.

cation, and Correspondence between the Inhabitants of distant Countries in their respective Languages, and with this view only I now prepare this Plan for the mere easy learning the Languages of France and Italy.

NOTwithstanding the Brevity which I at all Times profess, I cannot but observe that the Italian Language will be found to abound with many Beauties and Ornaments of Discourse, and has a peculiar Grace in Expression, in which other Languages may be said to be deficient: It will also be found that the Writers in that Language, especially the Poets, have accustomed themselves to a Freedom in diminishing and enlarging Words at Pleasure: This may at first be thought an Inconvenience, but a little Attention, and Reading the best Authors, under the Direction of an intelligent Master, will soon remove this seeming Difficulty, and a Knowledge of the Italian will be most pleasant and easy to attain in a short Time, especially to every Learner before instructed either in the Latin or French Tongues.

T H E

THE CONTENTS.

	Page
I. THE Introduction.	1
II. Of the Pronounciation of Vowells	2
III. _____ of the Consonants.	3
IV. General Observations.	8
V. Of the Apostrophe.	10
VI. Of the Accents.	12
VII. Of Articles.	15
VIII. Of the Nouns.	16
IX. Observations on the Nouns.	22
X. Of Nouns Adjectives.	24
XI. Of Pronouns.	26
XII. Of the Auxiliary Verbs <i>Haver</i> to have, and <i>Essere</i> to be.	36
XIII. Table of the Article <i>il</i> the, &c.	52
XIV. Rules for the <i>Italian</i> Tongue in five Chapters	53. seq.
XV. Table of <i>Italian</i> Pronouns.	64
XVI. Necessary Remarks on the Particles.	109
XVII. Compositions or Lessons.	111
XVIII. Significations of Verbs.	163
XIX. Phrases in Dialogues.	173
XX. Months of the Year.	177
XXI. Days of the Week.	ibid.
XXII. The Holy Days of the Year.	178
XXIII. Proper Names of Men, &c.	179
b	XXV.

vi *The CONTENTS.*

XXIV. Vocabulary of Words.	181.
XXV. Numbers.	184.
XXVI. Table of Regular Verbs.	185
XXVII. Concerning the <i>Italian</i> Verbs.	<i>ibid.</i>
XXVIII. Verbs Regular in <i>are</i> .	187
XXIX. Verbs Regular in <i>ere</i> .	191
XXX. Verbs Regular in <i>ire</i> .	193
XXI. Of Verbs Passive, Reciprocal, and Neuter.	196
XXXII. Of Verbs Irregular.	198
XXXIII. Verbs Irregular in <i>are</i>	200
XXXIV. Verbs Irregular in <i>ere</i> .	204
XXXV. Verbs Irregular in <i>ire</i> .	241
XXXVI. Necessary Observations on the Conjugations of Verbs.	250
XXVII. Example of <i>Italian</i> Poetry.	252

A N

E R R A T A.

PAGE 10, Line 16, read *with a Vowel or the.*
 p. 11, l. 23, read *to me it.* p. 13, l. 3, read *be loved.*
 p. 18, l. 6, read *li podesci,* p. 24, l. 30, read *than.* p. 26.
 l. 1, read *learnedly.* l. 2, *richly.* p. 29, l. 24, read *to ber*
it. p. 39, l. 7, for *Attive,* read *Passive.* p. 91, l. 22, for
fiasco read *fiasco.* p. 218, *dele* the Verb *Giungere* to *join,*
 and decline it like to *distinguere,* p. 214.

A N
INTRODUCTION
TO THE
Italian Tongue.

THE *Italian Tongue* has only Twenty Letters.

A	Pronounce	A
B		be
C		ce
D		de
E		e
F		ef
G		ge
H		ash
I		i
L		el
M		em
N		en
O		o
P		pe
Q		qu
R		er
S		es
T		te
U		u
Z		zeta

B

Of

Of these, Five are Vowels.

A. E. I. O. U.

The Others are Consonants.

Note. K. X. Y. are not Letters of the *Italian* Tongue; except the Letter *X* in *Xantho*, a Man's Name, to distinguish it from *Sento*, holy. Also the Letters *J* and *V* Consonant; though sometimes used; are not reckoned in the *Italian* Alphabet.

Of the Pronunciation of the VOWELS.

I. *A*, is sounded broad like *aw* in *English*, as, *Panc*, Bread, *say*, *Pawne*.

II. *E*, is pronounced like the *English e*, when by itself.

III. *I*, is pronounced like *ee* in *English*, as, *minimo* the least, *say*, *meinimo*.

IV. *O*, has two different sounds.

1. The Letter *O* sounds *open*, that is, strong and clear, as in the *English* words *dore*, *store*; and this is the most general use of this Letter, except in words that correspond with the following Rules, when *O* is pronounced *close*, that is, more soft, or like *U* in *turret*, *stumble*.

2. *O* is *close*, that is, sounded more soft when accented, in words ending in *ore*, *ora*, *ore*, *oro*, *oso*; as, *oratiōne* prayer, *qual-hóra* sometimes, *Signóre* Sir, *colóro* those, *amoroso* amorous.

[3]

O is pronounced close before *l, m, n, r*; as, *cólmo* topfull, pronounce *culma*; *pónta* a point, say *punta*; *Róma* Rome, say *Ruma*: Also, before *gn* the *o* is close; as, *Bolónya* Bologne, say *Bolunnia*.

O, after *i* and *u*, sounds *open* or *strong*; as, *chióma* a head of hair, *cuóre* a heart, say *chóma*, *córe*.

Except from this last Rule *duo*, *tuo*, *suo*, *virtuoso*; in which words the *u* is pronounced as double *oo*, by reason the *u* and *o* make two syllables, *du-o*, *tu-o*, &c.

V. *U*, Vowel, is pronounced like *Oo* in *English*; as, *Lúna* the moon, read *Lóona*: Note that, *u* before another Vowel, beginning a word, becomes a Consonant, and is pronounced as in *English*; as, *uestro* yours, *vitio* vice, &c.

Uu, between Vowels, is pronounced as a single *u*; as, *auvenir* to happen, say *avenire*.

Of the CONSONANTS.

THE Consonants that differ most from the *English* Pronunciation, are *C. G. Z.* to these may be added *H. S. T.*

C.

C, before the Vowels *a, o, u*, is pronounced like *K* in *English*; as, *casa* a house, say *kasa*; *collo* a neck, say *kollo*; *cura* care, say *kura*.

Also, *C*, when double, or before the letter *b*, is pronounced strong ; as, *vacca* a cow, say *vakka* ; *spéchi* looking-glasses, say *spekky*.

C, before *e* and *i*, sounds like *che*, *chi*, as in the English words, *Cherry*, *Children* ; as, *cena* a supper, say *chena* ; *Cesare* Cesar, say *Chefare* ; *città* a city, say *chittà*.

Ct, before *e* and *i*, the first is pronounced like unto *T* softly ; as, *accento* an accent, say *atcento* ; *braccio* an arm, say *bratchio*.

G.

G, before the Vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, is pronounced as in English.

G, before the Vowels *e* or *i*, is pronounced like the English Consonant *j* ; as, *género* a son-in-law, say *jenero* ; *gelo* frost, say *jelo*. If *g* comes between either of these Vowels, it is pronounced as if *d* was before it ; as, *vigilante* watchful, say *vidgilante*.

Gg, before *e* or *i*, the first *g* is pronounced as *d*, and the latter as *g* ; as, *oggetto* an object, say *odgetto* ; *hoggi* to-day, say *odgi*.

G, before *l*, sounds also like *t* ; as, *figlio* a son, say *fillio* : Except in these words, *Inglese*, *negligenza*, *negletto*, *globo*, *conglutinare*, in which words *g* sounds like as in English.

G, before *n*, is sounded like another *n*, and the sound of the letter *i* follows after the last *n* ; as, *agnallo* a lamb, say *anniello* ; *regno* a kingdom, say *rennie*.

The

[5]

The syllables *gua*, *gue*, *gui*, are pronounced *ga*, *ge*, *gi*, or rather, *gwa*, *gue*, *gui*.

The syllables *ghe*, *ghi*, are pronounced *gue*, *gui* ; as, *bottégh* shops, say *bottégue* ; *luoghi* places, say *luogui*.

Z.

Z, as well single as double, is generally pronounced like *Ts* ; as, *zio* an uncle, say *tsio* ; *zóppo* lame, say *tsoppo* ; *bellézza* beauty, say *bellétsa* ; *fazzoletta* a handkerchief, say *fatsoletta* ; *nozze* a wedding, say *notse* ; *diligenza* diligence, say *diligentsa* ; *forza* strength, say *fortsa*. And note, that in pronouncing these words, a small rest is to be made on the *t* before the *s*.

Z is pronounced like *ds*, in words which in *English* and *Latin* are wrote with a *Z* ; as, *Lazaro* *Lazarus*, say *Ladsáro* ; *zona* a zone, say *dsóna* ; *gazzetta* a gazette, say *gadsetta* ; *mizo* the middle, say *midso* ; *azuro* blue, say *adsuro*.

H.

The letter *H* is neither aspirated, nor pronounced in the beginning of words ; as, *Hora* an hour ; *ho* I have ; *humano* human ; read *ora*, *ò*, *osmano*.

S.

The letter *S*, in the beginning of words, is pronounced as in *English* ; as, *Salute* health, *servo* a servant, *sopra* upon.

[6]

S, before *e*, *f*, *p*, *t*, keeps its natural sound ; as, *scalà* a ladder, *véspa* a wasp, *stúdio* study.

S, before *d*, *g*, *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, *u*, is pronounced like *z* ; as, *sdérgno* disdain, read *zdegno* ; *sguardo* a look, read *zguardo* ; *smánia* madness, read *zmánia*, &c.

S, between two Vowels, is pronounced also like *z* ; as, *mísero* miserable, say *mízero* ; *desío* a desire, say *dezío* ; *casa* a house, say *caza* ; *uso* used, say *uzzo*. Except *S* in *cosí* so, which is pronounced *coſí*. *Sa*, in these two words only, *cosa* a thing, and *rosa* gnawed, is pronounced in like manner.

Si, when added to other words, keeps its natural sound ; as, *scriveſi* they write, *parlaſi* they say, &c.

T.

T, before *ia*, *ie*, *ii*, *io*, in the middle or ending of words, is pronounced *ts* ; as *gratia* grace, say *gratſia* ; *natione* a nation, say *natiſone* ; *vitiī* vices, say *vitſi* ; *ótio* idleness, say *ótſio*.

Except, in the words following, *ambastia* extasy, *saettia* a pinnace, *malatia* sickness, *queſtione* a question, *moleſtia* trouble ; the letter *s* preceding the letter *t* : Also in *tiéne* he holdeth, *patiáte* ye may be able, *patiámo* we may suffer, *patiáte* ye may suffer ; and some other Verbs which will be learnt by practice.

Note. The other Consonants *b*. *d*. *f*. *l*. *m*. *n*. *p*. *r*. are pronounced as in *English* : Instead of *k*, the *Italians* use *ch* ; and instead of *ph*, the letter *f*.

For

For the Learner's more ready improvement,
let him attend to the following Recapitulation of
the *Italian Pronunciation*.

		<i>Example.</i>	
<i>Ce</i>	read	<i>che</i>	<i>cena</i> chena
<i>ci</i>		<i>chi</i>	<i>città</i> chittà
<i>cia</i>		<i>chia</i>	<i>ciascuno</i> chiascuno
<i>cie</i>		<i>chie</i>	<i>cielo</i> chielo
<i>cio</i>		<i>chio</i>	<i>bacio</i> batchio
<i>ge</i>		<i>dge</i>	<i>genio</i> dgenio
<i>gi</i>		<i>dgi</i>	<i>giro</i> dgiro
<i>gia</i>		<i>ja</i>	<i>giardino</i> jardino
<i>gie</i>		<i>je</i>	<i>Giesu</i> jesu
<i>gio</i>		<i>jo</i>	<i>giouve</i> jove
<i>giu</i>		<i>joo</i>	<i>giusto</i> joosto
<i>gli</i>		<i>lli</i>	<i>pigliare</i> pilliare
<i>gna, gne, &c.</i>		<i>nnia, nnie,</i>	<i>regnare</i> renniare
<i>chei</i>		<i>ke</i>	<i>che</i> ke
<i>chi</i>		<i>ki</i>	<i>chi</i> ki
<i>sci</i>		<i>she</i>	<i>seemare</i> shemare
<i>sci</i>		<i>shi</i>	<i>lasciare</i> lashiare
<i>ti</i>		<i>tsi</i>	<i>natione</i> natsione
<i>u</i>		<i>oo</i>	<i>Virtù</i> Virtoo
<i>u before o,</i>		<i>o</i>	<i>buono</i> bono
<i>vv</i>		<i>v</i>	<i>avvenire</i> avenir
<i>z } z }</i>		<i>ts } or ds }</i>	<i>diligenza</i> diligentsa <i>zefiro</i> dsefiro

Observe always to rest on the pronunciation of the Vowels accented thus, *tà, virtù, escitù, amò, amerò, amerà, credè, sentì, crederà, sentirà*.

Note.

Note. By these Examples it may be seen, that the Italian Tongue does not so greatly differ in pronunciation from the English; but, notwithstanding this, it may at all times be most proper to attend to the instructions of an able Master, as every language has some peculiar expressions which are better learnt by the ear, than by any written Rules.

General OBSERVATIONS.

I. **T**HE Italian Tongue differs in this from the French, that all words are written after the same manner they are pronounced.

II. That the Consonants in the beginning of compound words are doubled, as, *ab-battere*, *ap-pogiare*, *ap-presso*, *dif-ficile*, *of-fendere*, &c.

III. The letter *g* is doubled, when followed by *ia* and *io*, and make together but one syllable; as, *Loggia* a lodge, *Maggia* May: But if the Vowels *ia* and *io* be divided or pronounced distinct, the *g* is not doubled; as, *agio* easy, *privilegio* privilege, *malvagio* bad.

The letter *g* is also doubled in the infinitive mood of verbs, and in those tenses where a vowel comes before *gere*; as, *leggere* to read, *reggere* to govern; otherwise the *g* remains single; as, *fingere* to feign, *pingere* to paint, &c.

IV. All words that begin in *English* with any consonant, as, *Jesu*, *Joseph*, *Journal*, are by the *Italians* wrote by *G*; as, *Giesu*, *Gioseppe*, *Giornale*.

V. That-

V. That the Vowels *E*, *O*, and *I*, are not pronounced when they follow the letters *l*, *n*, *r*, and for the most part not expressed in writing, unlesf they end the sentence ; as,

Bel tempo fâ, it is fair weather, not *bello*.

Di buon ingégno, of a good wit, not *buono*.

Un mal non vien solo, a mischief comes not alone, not *uno male*.

Huomin' da bene, honest men, not *huomini*.

Also sometimes when they follow *t*, *d*, or *m* ; as,

Fra Bernardo, Brother Bernard, not *Frate*.

Gran Saggéto, an eminent man, not *grande*, &c.

Note. To this Rule there are some exceptions in the words *Animo* the mind, *Regno* a kingdom, *Apollo* the God *Apollo*, and some others ; as, *Apollo siede nel trone*, Apollo sitteth on the throne, not *Apol siede*, &c.

VI. Words beginning with *S*, require the preceeding word to end with a Vowel ; as, *grande stato*, *quello spirito*, *essere stato*, for *gran stato*, *quel spirito*, *esser stato*.

VII. Words of the infinitive mood are not cut off at the end, though a Vowel follows ; as, *parlare alto* to speak aloud, not *parlar alto* : And note the final Vowels of words are always to be pronounced very soft ; also, that the *Italian* Poets take great liberty in retrenching or cutting off words at their pleasure, which will be readily observed by reading the best Authors.

Of the APOSTROPHE.

THE *Apostrophe* is expressed in this wise (') whereby in speaking and writing it is shewn, that a Vowel is cut off or left out for the more quick pronunciation. It is generally put after articles ending in a Vowel, the next word beginning with another Vowel, or the letter *h*; as, *l'animo*, *l'usanza*, *l'onore*.

Note. The *i* of the article *il* is apostroph'd, or cut off after words ending with a Vowel, and not the Vowel of that word; as,

Ditemi 'l vostro nome, for *ditemi il vostro nome*,
tell me your name.

Tutto 'l mondo sà, for *tutto il mondo sà*, every body knows.

The pronoun *che* is abbreviated before words beginning with the letter *b*, in this wise; viz. *che havete*, read *c' havete*.

Mi, ti, ci, si, vi, di, da, ne, are apostroph'd before Vowels, or the letter *b*; as,

M' intendi? do you understand me? for *mi intendi*.

T' intendo, I do understand you, for *ti intendo*.

S' intende, it is understood, for *si intende*, &c.

Note. The following Examples will explain the nature of these abbreviations or contractions more fully to the learner.

Al, for, *a il*, to the.

Ai, *a'*, for, *alli*, to the.

Bei, *be'*, for, *belli*, fair, beautiful.

Bell' amante, for, *bello amante*, a fair lover.

Ch',

[11]

Ch', for, *che*, that, or which.
Coi, co', for, *con li* or *con gli*, with the.
Colla, for, *conla*, with the.
Colle, for, *conle*, with the.
D', for *di*, of.
Del, for *di il*, of the.
De', *dei*, for *delli* or *degli*, of the, pl.
Ei, e', for *egli*, he, or, it.
E'l, for *& il*, and it, and the.
Fra', for, *fra li*, among the.
Fé, for *fete*, he did, or, made.
Fè, for *fede*, faith.
Fos' Io, for, *fossi Io*, were I.
Gl', for, *gli*, the.
Huomin' da bene, for *buomini da bene*, honest men.
Huómin' ingrati, for *buomini ingrati*, ungrateful men.
Lo' imperatore, for, *lo Imperatore*, the Emperor.
Lo'nventore, for, *lo inventore*, the inventor.
Madonna, for, *mía donna*, my woman.
Madonna, the Virgin Mary.
Me' for *meglio*, better.
Me'l, for *a me il*, to meet it.
Mie', for *miei*, mine.
Molt' anni, for *molti anni*, many years.
Nel, for, *in li*, in the.
Ne'l, for, *ne il*, nor the, or, for it.
No'l, for, *non il*, not the.
Nollo, for, *non lo*, not the.
Pel, for, *per il*, or *per lo*, or the, or through the.
Pel, for, *per lo*, idem.
Puo, for *puoi*, thou canst.
Quai, for *quali*, which.
Quai, for *quelli*, those.
Quand' il, for *quando il*, when the.

Sant,

Sant' Antonio, for *Santo Antonio*.

Suo', for *suoi*, his.

Se', for *sei*, thou art.

Se'l, for, *a se il*, to himself it, or, if it.

Su'l, for, *sopra il*, upon the.

Tra', for *tra li*, among the.

Te'l, for *a te il*, to thee; it.

Tuo', for *tuoi*, thine.

Tu'l, for *tu il*, thou it.

Tra'l, for, *tra il*, betwixt the.

Of the ACCENTS.

THE *Italians* have two Accents, which denote the syllables to be pronounced long or short, as in other languages.

The one *Grave* [`] the other *Acute* ['] expressed each by these opposite marks.

Nouns ending in *tà* in *Italian*, which are generally derived from *tas* in the *Latin*, have a *Grave Accent*; as, *purità*, *castità*, *maestà*, &c. And note, the plural of these words do not change, but end in *tà* also; except *visita*, which is not accented, and makes its plural *visite*.

Nouns derived from the *Latin* in *us*, and end in *Italian* in *u*, have a *Grave Accent*; as, *virtus*, *la virtù*, *le virtù*, &c.

The *Grave Accent* is put to the end of verbs of the first and third person of the Future Tense; as, *canterò* I shall sing, *canterà* he will sing. It is also used on Verbs of one syllable, ending in *o* and *a*, and other words, as may be seen by the following,

lowing, which are always expressed by a *Grave Accent*.

<i>Amò, Illeve. He loce.</i>	<i>Nò</i> , neither, or nor.
<i>Ciò, that.</i>	<i>No</i> , not.
<i>Così, there.</i>	<i>ò</i> , or.
<i>Così, thither.</i>	<i>Oibò, fie.</i> <i>✓</i>
<i>Dà, he giveth.</i>	<i>Perchè?</i> because, why, or wherefore.
<i>Dò, I give.</i>	<i>Perciò</i> , wherefore.
<i>Di, a day.</i>	<i>Però, therefore, yet.</i> <i>✓</i>
<i>è, is.</i>	<i>Più, more.</i>
<i>Europa, Europe.</i>	<i>Piè, a foot, or feet.</i>
<i>Eufrate, Euphrates.</i>	<i>Podestà, a Governor.</i> <i>✓</i>
<i>Fà, he doth, or makes.</i>	<i>Può, he can, or is a-</i> <i>ble.</i>
<i>Fò, I do, or make.</i>	<i>Quà, hither.</i>
<i>Fù, hath been.</i>	<i>Qui, here.</i>
<i>Frà, betwixt, also a contract, or abbrevi- ation, of Frate a Fryer.</i>	<i>Rè, a King, or Kings.</i>
<i>Già, formerly, or now.</i>	<i>Stà, he stands, dwells, or is.</i>
<i>Giesù, Jesus.</i>	<i>Stò, I stand, or am, or dwell.</i>
<i>Grù, a crane.</i>	<i>Sà, he knows.</i>
<i>Giù, down, below.</i>	<i>Sè, himself.</i>
<i>Hà, he hath.</i>	<i>Si, yes.</i>
<i>Ho, I have.</i>	<i>Sò, I know.</i>
<i>Honestà, honesty.</i>	<i>Sù, up.</i>
<i>Horsù, come away.</i>	<i>Tè, thee.</i>
<i>Fuggiro, they fled, for fuggirono.</i>	<i>Trà, betwixt.</i>
<i>Là, there, thither.</i>	<i>Trè, three.</i>
<i>Lì, there, or here.</i>	<i>Tò, for togli, take thou, also mark, or ob- serve.</i>
<i>Mà, but.</i>	
<i>Mò, presently.</i>	

Tù, thou.
Và, he goeth.
Vò, I go.

Viè, } more : pro-
Vià, } nounced in
 one sound.

Note. 1. When the Pronoun is put after the Verb, no Accent is used ; as, *farollo*, for *Io farò* I shall do it ; *mostremmi*, for *mi mostrò* he will shew me.

2. When the first person of the Definite Tense ends with two Vowels, the third person of the same tense is accented, but not otherwise ; as, *amò* he loved, *credè* he believed, the first persons of which are *amai*, *credei*. For this reason, *vinse*, *prese*, are not accented, making in the first person *vinfi*, *presi*.

The *Acute Accent* is used on the last syllable but one of words ending in *ia* and *io* ; as, *pazzia* folly, *profezia* prophecy, *desio* desire, &c. And also on words that have a double signification ; as, *tenere* to hold, is by the Accent distinguished from *tenere* tender ; *ancóra* still, from *ancora* an anchor.

Note. This Rule is attended with so many uncertainties, that it is difficult to give certain Examples for the Reader's instruction ; Practice in reading, and a good Master, will be the best guide.

Of ARTICLES.

THE Articles will be found to be fully explained in the following RULES; yet it may not be improper to give the Learner here an Example of their Declensions.

The Definite Article *Il.* or *Lo.* the or a, Masculine. *La* the or a, Feminine.

Sing. Nom. *Il.* the, or *a.*

Gen. *del.* of the, or of *a.*

Dat. *al.* to the, or to *a.*

Acc. *il.* the, or *a.*

Voc. *o. o.*

Abl. *dal.* from the, or from *a.*

Plur. Nom. *i.* or *li.* the.

Gen. *dei.* or *delli.* of the.

Dat. *ai* or *alli* to the.

Acc. *i* or *li* the.

Voc. *o. o.*

Abl. *dai* or *dalli* from the.

Sing. Nom. *lo.* the, or *a.*

Gen. *dello.* of the, or of *a.*

Dat. *allo.* to the, or to *a.*

Acc. *lo.* the, or *a.*

Voc. *o. o.*

Abl. *dallo.* from the, or from *a.*

Plur. Nom. *gli.* the.

Gen. *degli.* of the.

Dat. *agli.* to the.

Acc. *gli.* the.

Voc. *o. o.*

Abl. *dagli.* from the.

Sing.	Nom.	<i>la.</i> the, or a.
	Gen.	<i>della.</i> of the, or of a.
	Dat.	<i>alla.</i> to the, or to a.
	Acc.	<i>la.</i> the, or a.
	Voc.	<i>o. o.</i>
	Abl.	<i>dalla.</i> from the, or from a.
Plur.	Nom.	<i>le.</i> the.
	Gen.	<i>delle.</i> of the.
	Dat.	<i>alle.</i> to the.
	Acc.	<i>le.</i> the.
	Voc.	<i>o. o.</i>
	Abl.	<i>dalle.</i> from the.

The Articles *il*, and *lo*, Singular, with their Plurals *i*, *li*, and *gli*, serve to the Masculine Gender, and *la* Sing. *lo* Plural to the Feminine.

Of the N O U N S.

THE Nouns in the *Italian* Tongue do not vary their Cases, but like to the *English* and *French*, their Cases are distinguished by the Article only ; and the Nouns in the *Italian* Tongue terminate or end in one of the Vowels *a, e, i, o, u*.

I shall give an Example of the Declension of Nouns, with the Articles, as in the foregoing Chapter, according to their Terminations.

I. NOUNS

I. Nouns ending in *a* are of the Feminine Gender, and make their Plural in *e*.

Singular.

Nom.	<i>la Casa</i>	the House.
Gen.	<i>della Casa</i> ,	of the House.
Dat.	<i>alla Casa</i> ,	to the House.
Acc.	<i>la Casa</i> ,	the House.
Voc.	<i>O Casa</i> ,	O House.
Abl.	<i>dalla Casa</i> ,	from the House.

Plural.

Nom.	<i>le Case</i> ,	the Houses.
Gen.	<i>delle Case</i> ,	of the Houses.
Dat.	<i>alle Case</i> ,	to the Houses.
Acc.	<i>le Case</i> ,	the Houses.
Voc.	<i>O Case</i> ,	O Houses.
Abl.	<i>dalle Case</i> ,	from the Houses.

Nouns of this Gender, beginning with a Vowel, make the Article apostrophed in this wise :

Sing.	Nom.	<i>l' anima</i> ,	a soul.
	Gen.	<i>dell' anima</i> ,	of a soul.
	Dat.	<i>all' anima</i> ,	to a soul, &c.

Note. 1. Nouns ending in *ca* and *ga*, introduce *h* in the Plural Number before the last Vowel, in order to soften the Pronunciation ; as, *la manica* a sleeve, *le maniche* Plur. *la piaga* a wound, *le piaghe* Plur.

2. Nouns ending in *ty* in English, and in Italian in *tà* accented, make their Termination alike in both Numbers, Singular and Plural ; as, Chastity,

la castità, le castità Plur. Purity, *la purità, le purità* Plur.

3. Nouns of this Termination in *a*, being Names of Offices or Dignity, are Masculine, and make their Plural in *i*; as, *il profeta* a Prophet, *li profeti* Plur. *il podestà* a Governor, makes *li podestà* Plur. *il papa* a Pope, *i papi* Plur.

II. NOUNS ending in *e*, both Masculine and Feminine, Substantives and Adjectives, make their Plural in *i*.

Masculine Gender, Singular.

Nom.	<i>il Padre,</i>	a Father.
Gen.	<i>del Padre,</i>	of a Father.
Dat.	<i>al Padre,</i>	to a Father.
Acc.	<i>il Padre,</i>	a Father,
Voc.	<i>O Padre,</i>	O Father.
Abl.	<i>dal Padre,</i>	from a Father.

Plural.

Nom.	<i>i Padri,</i>	the Fathers.
Gen.	<i>dei Padri,</i>	of the Fathers.
Dat.	<i>ai Padri,</i>	to the Fathers.
Acc.	<i>i Padri,</i>	the Fathers.
Voc.	<i>O Padri,</i>	O Fathers.
Abl.	<i>da i Padri,</i>	from the Fathers.

Feminine Gender, Singular.

Nom.	<i>la Madre,</i>	a Mother.
Gen.	<i>della Madre,</i>	of a Mother.
Dat.	<i>alla Madre,</i>	to a Mother.
Acc.	<i>la Madre,</i>	a Mother.
Voc.	<i>O Madre,</i>	O Mother.
Abl.	<i>dalla Madre,</i>	from a Mother.

Plural.

Plural.

Nom.	<i>le Madri</i> ,	the Mothers.
Gen.	<i>delle Madri</i> ,	of the Mothers.
Dat.	<i>alle Madri</i> ,	to the Mothers.
Acc.	<i>le Madri</i> ,	the Mothers.
Voc.	<i>O Madri</i> ,	O Mothers.
Abl.	<i>dalle Madri</i> ,	from the Mothers.

Exception to this Rule, *il Rè* a King makes *i Rè* in the Plural ; as do also, *la Specie* a Figure, *le Specie* ; *la Superficie* the Superficies, *le Superficie* ; *l' Effegie* the Effigies, *le Effegie* ; *la Temperie* the Season, *le Temperie*, and some others.

Bue an Ox makes *Buoi* in the Plural, *Moglia* a Wife makes *Mogli*, *Mille* a Thousand makes *Mila* Plural.

Note. I. Nouns which end in *me*, are of the Masculine Gender ; as, *il Fiume* a River, *il Verme* a Worm ; except two only, *la Speme* Hope, *la Fame* Hunger.

II. All Nouns ending in *ore*, are of the Masculine Gender ; as, *il Cuore* the Heart, *il Calore* Heat, &c. Also Nouns ending in *re* and *nte*, except a few of each Termination ; as, *la Madre* a Mother, *la Torre* a Tower, *la Polvere* Dust, *la Febre* a Fever, which are of the Feminine Gender. In *nte*, there are but two Nouns of the Feminine Gender, viz. *la Gente* a Nation, *la Mente* the Mind.

Also the Italians say *il* and *la Fante* a Man or Woman Servant, *il* and *la Fronte* the Forehead ; and the Variation of the Gender in other Nouns is generally as in Latin, and will be found in the Dictionary, and readily occur by Practice.

The Nouns following are Feminine, and have no Singular Number; as, *Nozze* a Wedding, *Esequie* Funeral, *Minacce* Threatnings, *Spezie* Drugs.

III. Nouns ending in *i* are but fifteen in Number, and do not change in the Plural, but are only distinguished by their Article, whether they be simple Substantives, or the Names of Men or Cities.

Example. <i>il Dì</i>	the Day,	Plural. <i>i Dì</i> .
<i>il Lunedì</i>	Monday,	<i>i Lunedì</i> .
<i>la Dioceſi</i>	a Dioceſis,	<i>le Dioceſi</i> .
<i>la Iri</i>	the Rainbow,	<i>le Iri</i> .
<i>Giovanni</i>	John,	<i>Giovanni</i> .
<i>Parigi</i>	Paris,	<i>Parigi</i> .
<i>Napoli</i>	Naples,	<i>Napoli</i> , &c.

Nouns of Number also end in *i*; as, *Dieci* Ten, *Undici* Eleven, *Venti* Twenty.

IV. Nouns ending in *o* are all of the Masculine Gender, except *la Mano* a Hand, and make their Plural in *i*; as, *il Fratello* a Brother, *i Fratelli* Brothers; *la Mano* a Hand, *le Mani* Hands. *Huomo* a Man, makes *Huomini* in the Plural.

Note. Some Substantives in *o*, for the greater Elegance, make their Plural in *a* rather than in *i*, and then their Plurals are of the Feminine Gender; they are these that follow.

<i>l'anello,</i>	<i>le anella,</i>	the Rings.
<i>il braccio,</i>	<i>le braccia,</i>	the Arms.
<i>il budello,</i>	<i>le budella,</i>	the Guts.
<i>il calcagno,</i>	<i>le calcagna,</i>	the Heels.
<i>il cerchio,</i>	<i>le cerchia,</i>	the Hoops.
<i>il ciglio,</i>	<i>le ciglia,</i>	the Eye-brows.
<i>il corno,</i>	<i>le corna,</i>	the Horns.
<i>il dito,</i>	<i>le dita,</i>	the Fingers.
<i>il ditello,</i>	<i>le ditella,</i>	the Arm-pits.
<i>il filo,</i>	<i>le fila,</i>	the Threads.
<i>il grido,</i>	<i>le grida,</i>	the Cries.
<i>il guscio,</i>	<i>le guscia,</i>	the Shells.
<i>il ginocchio,</i>	<i>le ginocchia,</i>	the Knees.
<i>il labro,</i>	<i>le labra,</i>	the Lips.
<i>il lenzuolo,</i>	<i>le lenzuola,</i>	the Sheets.
<i>il legno,</i>	<i>le legna,</i>	the Sticks.
<i>il melo,</i>	<i>le mela,</i>	the Apples.
<i>il membro,</i>	<i>le membra,</i>	the Members.
<i>il muro,</i>	<i>le mura,</i>	the Walls.
<i>il migliaio,</i>	<i>le migliaia,</i>	Thousands.
<i>l'orecchio,</i>	<i>le orecchia,</i>	the Ears.
<i>l'osso,</i>	<i>le ossa,</i>	the Bones.
<i>il paio,</i>	<i>le paia,</i>	Pairs.
<i>il pomo,</i>	<i>le poma,</i>	Apples.
<i>il pugno,</i>	<i>le pugna,</i>	Fists.
<i>lo staio,</i>	<i>le staia,</i>	the Bushels.
<i>il riso,</i>	<i>le risa,</i>	Laughters.
<i>l'uovo,</i>	<i>le uova,</i>	the Eggs.
<i>il rubbio,</i>	<i>le rubbia,</i>	the Measures.
<i>il vestigio,</i>	<i>le vestigia,</i>	the Footsteps.

Nouns, ending in *co* and *go*, of two Syllables only, take an *h* in the Plural to avoid a harsh Pronunciation: Example; *il Fuoco, i Fuochi*, the Fires; *il Luogo* the Place, *i Luoghi* the Places; except *il Porco*

Porco a Hog, *il Greco* a Greek, which make *i Porci*, *i Greci*, Plural.

Figlio a Son, makes *Figli*; *Baccio* a Kifs, *Baci*; *Occhio* an Eye, *Occhi* in the Plural Number: In like manner, other Words form their Plural, by leaving out the final *o* of the singular Number; Words also ending in *io*, end their Plural in two *ii*; as, *vario* several, *varii*; *tempio*, *tempii*, Temples; *incendio*, *incendii*, Burnings; *natio*, *natii*, Natives; or as some Authors write them, *varij*, *tempij*, *incendij*, *natij*.

V. There are only six Nouns in the *Italian* Tongue that end in *u*, and these are all of the Feminine Gender, and change not their Terminations in the Plural Number: They are here set down, *viz.*

<i>la grù</i> ,	A Crane,	<i>le grù.</i>
<i>la gioventù</i> ,	Youth,	<i>le gioventù.</i>
<i>la servitù</i> ,	Servitude,	<i>le servitù.</i>
<i>la tribù</i> ,	A Tribe,	<i>le tribù.</i>
<i>la virtù</i> ,	Virtue,	<i>le virtù.</i>
<i>la schiavitù</i> ,	Slavery,	<i>le schiavitù.</i>

OBSERVATIONS on the NOUNS.

THE *Italians* have a peculiar Method of increasing or diminishing the Signification of their Nouns, by the Addition of certain Syllables to the End of each Noun; this Addition serves to add to, or take from, the Merit of the Thing expressed, or to express its remarkable Quality, be it either good or bad, great or little.

i. The

I. The *Augmentatives*, in a good or enlarged Sense, are formed by changing the last Vowel into *one*, *ona*, *otto*, *otta*; as,

Capello a Hat, *Capellone* a great large Hat.

Donna a Woman, *Donnona* a good Woman.

Castello a Castle, *Castellotto* a great large Castle.

Casa a House, *Casotta* or *Casone* a large spacious [House.

1. Let it be observed, that these *Augmentatives* are frequently of the Masculine Gender, though the original Nouns are themselves of the Feminine; as, *Casa* is Feminine, *Casotta* or *Casone* Masculine.

2. The other *Augmentatives*, which declare the Thing mean, or of small Account, are formed by changing the last Vowel into *accio* Masculine, *accia* Feminine; as,

Capello a Hat, *Capellaccio* a great ugly Hat.

Donna a Woman, *Donnaccia* a large bad Woman.

Casa a House, *Casaccia* a great filthy House.

II. The *Diminutives* are of two Sorts, that is, of Kindness and Flattery, or of Compassion or Mocking.

1. Those of Kindness and Flattery, make their Termination or Ending in *ino*, *etto*, *ello* Masculine, *ina*, *etta*, *ella* Feminine; Example, *Pastore* a Shepherd, *Pastorello* a little Shepherd; *Pastora* a Shepherdess, *Pastorella* a little pretty Shepherdess.

2. Diminutives of Compassion and Mockery end in *uccio*, *uzzo*, *ucciolo* Masculine, and make their Feminines by changing *o* into *a*; as, from *Huomo* a Man,

a Man, is formed *Huomuccio*, *Huomuzzo*, *Huomucciuolo*, a poor little Man ; from *Donna* a Woman, is formed *Donniciuola* a poor silly Woman ; and the like as will be found in the Dictionary.

Diminutives, it is to be observed, are frequently of the Masculine Gender, though the first Noun be Feminine ; as, *Camera* a Chamber, Fem. *Camerino* a little Chamber, Masc.

Nouns of Plenty or Multitude take the Addition of *ame*, or *aglia* ; as, here are much People *ecco Gentame*, or *Gentaglia*.

Of NOUNS ADJECTIVES.

Adjectives have two Terminations only, *O* and *E* : Those ending in *O* are of the Masculine Gender in the Singular Number, and make their Plural in *I* ; as, *bello* fair, *belli* ; *santo* holy, *santi*, Plur. The Feminine Gender of these Nouns in *O* is formed by changing the *O* into *A* in the Singular Number, and into *E* in the Plural ; as, *bello*, *santo*, Masc. *bella*, *santa*, Fem. *belle*, *sante*, Plur.

Adjectives, which end in *E*, form both the Masculine and Feminine Gender in the Singular Number without any Change, and make their Plural in *I* only for both Genders ; as, *un buomo prudente* a prudent Man, *una donna prudente* a prudent Woman, *duoi buomini prudenti* two prudent Men, *due donne prudenti* two prudent Women.

Adjectives are compared by *più* more, *meno* less, *meglio* better, and the Word *fan*, which follows in Comparison, is rendered by *di*, *del*, *che*, *che*

the *non*, &c. as will be shewn fully in the **RULES**: The Superlative Degree of Adjectives, in English *most*, is formed by changing the last Vowel of the Positive into *issimo*, as from *grande* great, *grandissimo* most great; *santo* holy, *santissimo* most holy: *The most* is *il più*, *la più*; as, *il più bello* Masc. *la più bella* Fem. the Fairest, or most Fair.

Observ. 1. The following Adjectives are Exceptions to these general Rules of Comparison.

Buono good, *megliore* better, *ottimo* or *buonissimo* best. *Cattivo* bad, *peggiore* worse, *peffimo* or *cattivissimo* most bad, or worst.

Grande great, *maggiore* greater, *massimo* or *grandissimo* most great, or greatest.

Piccolo little, *minore* less, *minimo* or *piccolissimo* most little, or least.

Observ. 2. The Superlative Degree of Adjectives is often expressed by a Repetition of the Positive; as,

Your House is most fine
La vostra casa è bella bella.

Observ. 3. The Comparison of Adverbs, of like Sense with the Adjectives above mentioned, is in this wise :

Bene good, *meglio* better, *benissimo* or *ottimamente* best.

Male bad, *peggio* worse, *malissimo* or *peffimamente* most bad, or worst.

Poco little, *meno* or *manco* less, *pochissimo* least.

Note. By changing the last Letter of Nouns Adjectives into *issimamente*, is formed Adverbs of the Superlative Degree; as, of *dotto* learned, is *dottissimamente*

mamente most learned ; *ricco* rich, *ricchissimamente* most rich ; but this is not frequently admitted of, and rather than make use of so long Words, it is better to express yourself by the Substantive and Adjective in this manner :

The Preacher has preached most eloquently,
Il Predicatore *hà predicato con moltissima eloquenza.*
 You govern yourself most imprudently,
Vi governate con pochissima prudenza, or con grandissima imprudenza.

Of P R O N O U N S.

IT being the principal Business of the following RULES to explain the Difficulties of the *Italian* Tongue ; and as these chiefly are found to be in the *Pronouns*, the Learner will find them fully explained in the several *Rules* of this Book, and in the *Table of Pronouns*. I shall however here set down the Declension of the Personal Pronouns, as it will be of Service to the Learner to be thoroughly acquainted with them.

First Person.

Sing.	Nom.	I,	io.
	Gen.	of me,	<i>di me.</i>
	Dat.	to me,	<i>à me, or mi.</i>
	Acc.	me,	<i>me, or mi.</i>
	Abl.	from me,	<i>da me.</i>

Plur.

Plur.	Nom.	we,	<i>noi.</i>
	Gen.	of us,	<i>di noi.</i>
	Dat.	to us,	<i>à noi, or <u>ci.</u></i>
	Acc.	us,	<i>noi, <u>ci.</u></i>
	Abl.	from us,	<i>da noi.</i>

Second Person.

Sing.	Nom.	thou,	<i>tu, or <u>te.</u></i>
	Gen.	of thee,	<i>di te.</i>
	Dat.	to thee,	<i>à te, or <u>ti.</u></i>
	Acc.	thee,	<i>te, or <u>ti.</u></i>
	Abl.	from thee,	<i>da te.</i>
Plur.	Nom.	you or ye,	<i>voi.</i>
	Gen.	of you,	<i>di voi.</i>
	Dat.	to you,	<i>à voi, or <u>vi.</u></i>
	Acc.	you,	<i>voi, or <u>vi.</u></i>
	Abl.	from you,	<i>da voi.</i>

Third Person. *For the Masculine.*

Sing.	Nom.	he,	<i>egli, or <u>esso.</u></i>
	Gen.	of him,	<i>di lui.</i>
	Dat.	to him,	<i>à lui, or <u>gli.</u></i>
	Acc.	him,	<i>lui, or <u>lo.</u></i>
	Abl.	from him,	<i>da lui.</i>
Plur.	Nom.	they,	<i>egli, or <u>essi.</u></i>
	Gen.	of them,	<i>di loro.</i>
	Dat.	to them,	<i>à loro.</i>
	Acc.	them,	<i>loro, or <u>li.</u></i>
	Abl.	from them,	<i>da loro.</i>

Third Person. Feminine.

Sing.	Nom.	she,	ella, <i>essa</i> , <i>lei</i> .
	Gen.	of her,	<i>di lei</i> .
	Dat.	to her,	<i>à lei</i> . <i>le</i>
	Acc.	her,	<i>lei</i> , or <i>la</i> .
	Abl.	from her,	<i>da lei</i> .
Plur.	Nom.	they,	<i>elleno</i> , or <i>esse</i> .
	Gen.	of them,	<i>di loro</i> .
	Dat.	to them,	<i>à loro</i> , or <i>loro</i> .
	Acc.	them,	<i>loro</i> , or <i>le</i> .
	Abl.	from them,	<i>da loro</i> .

Pronouns Conjunctive have great resemblance with the Pronouns Personal: The Pronouns Personal are,

I, Thou, He, We, Ye, They.

The Pronouns Conjunctive are, *to me or me*, *to thee or thee*, *to himself or himself*, *to herself or herself*, *to him or him*, *to us or us*, *to you or ye*, *to them or them*.

They are expressed in Italian by *mi, ti, si, gli* or *le*, Sing. *ci, vi, loro*, Plur.

It is easy to remember, that the Pronouns Conjunctive, *me, thee, one's self or himself, to him, them or to them, &c.* are always expressed in Italian by *mi, ti, si, gli, or le, loro*: Example;

That pleases me, *questo mi piace*.

God sees thee, *Dio ti vede*.

The Sun rises, *il Sole si leva*.

I will tell him, *io gli dirò*, or *io le dirò*.

I promise them, *prometto loro*; Masc. and Fem. But

But these Pronouns will be fully explained in the following RULES, notwithstanding which it may be proper to observe here, that one of the greatest Difficulties they who study the *Italian Language* labour under, is to express the Pronouns Conjunctive joined to the Particles *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le* or *ne*; as, *milo*, *mila*, *mili*, *mile*, *mine*, &c. when the Letter *i* of the Pronoun Conjunctive is changed into *e*; as, to say *me of it*, instead of *mine*, you must speak and write *mine*, pronouncing the two Syllables short; the same is to be observed in all the following Pronouns Conjunctive; as for *milo*, write *melo*, &c.

<i>Me, mi; me</i>	<i>to me it,</i>	<i>melo, Masc.</i>
of it,	<i>to me it,</i>	<i>mela, Fem.</i>
<i>mene,</i>	<i>to me them,</i>	<i>meli, mele, M. & Fem.</i>
<i>Thee, ti;</i>	<i>to thee it,</i>	<i>telo, Mas.</i>
thee of	<i>to thee it,</i>	<i>tela, Fem.</i>
<i>it, tene,</i>	<i>to thee them,</i>	<i>teli, tele, M. & Fem.</i>
<i>Himself, se;</i>	<i>to himself it,</i>	<i>selo, Mas.</i>
himself of	<i>to himself it,</i>	<i>selo, Fem.</i>
<i>it, sene,</i>	<i>to himself them,</i>	<i>seli, sele, M. & Fem.</i>
<i>To him,</i>	<i>to him it,</i>	<i>glielo, Mas.</i>
<i>gli; to</i>	<i>to him it,</i>	<i>gliela, Fem.</i>
him of it,	<i>to him them,</i>	<i>glieli, gliest, M. & F.</i>
<i>gliene,</i>		
<i>Us, ci; us</i>	<i>to us it,</i>	<i>celo, Mas.</i>
of it,	<i>to us it,</i>	<i>cela, Fem.</i>
<i>cene.</i>	<i>to us them,</i>	<i>celi, cele, M. & F.</i>
<i>You, vi;</i>	<i>to you it,</i>	<i>velo, Mas.</i>
you of it,	<i>to you it,</i>	<i>vela, Fem.</i>
<i>vene,</i>	<i>to you them,</i>	<i>veli, vele, M. & F.</i>

To them, loro, to them of it, ne loro; putting *loro* always after the Verb.

Note, *loro* is sometimes put before the Verb; as, It seems good to them, *cio loro pare buono.*

Pronouns Possessive are Six in Number, and always take an Article before them, though not expressed in English or French.

	Singular.	Plural.
My,	<i>il mio</i> M. <i>la mia</i> F.	<i>i miei, le mie.</i>
Thy,	<i>il tuo</i> M. <i>la tua</i> F.	<i>i tuoi, le tue.</i>
His, her, it,	<i>il suo</i> M. <i>la sua</i> F.	<i>i suoi, le sue,</i>
Our,	<i>il nostro</i> M. <i>la nostra</i> F.	<i>i nostri, le nostre.</i>
Your,	<i>il vostro</i> M. <i>la vostra</i> F.	<i>i vostri, le vostre.</i>
Their,	<i>il loro</i> M. <i>la loro</i> F.	<i>i loro, le loro.</i>

Example :

	Sing. Masc.	Plural Masc.
My Book,	<i>il mio libro,</i>	<i>i miei libri.</i>
Thy, your Hat,	<i>il tuo cappello,</i>	<i>i tuoi cappelli.</i>
His Horse,	<i>il suo cavallo,</i>	<i>i suoi cavalli.</i>
Our Prince,	<i>il nostro Principe,</i>	<i>i nostri Principe.</i>
Your King,	<i>il vostro Re,</i>	<i>i vostri Re.</i>
Their Country,	<i>il loro paese,</i>	<i>i loro paese.</i>

The like of the other Pronouns Possessive, Masculine and Feminine, Singular and Plural : Where it may be noted that *loro* their, never changes its Number or Gender, but is distinguished only by the Article before it, as, *il loro, la loro, &c.*

To render the Declension of these Articles with the Pronouns more plain and easy to the Learner, the following Examples are here set down.

Mas-

MASCULINE GENDER.

Singular Number.

Nom.	<i>il mio Libro,</i>	my Book.
Gen.	<i>del mio Libro,</i>	of my Book.
Dat.	<i>al mio Libro,</i>	to my Book.
Abl.	<i>dal mio Libro,</i>	from my Book.

Plural.

Nom.	<i>i miei Libri,</i>	my Books.
Gen.	<i>de' miei Libri,</i>	of my Books.
Dat.	<i>a' miei Libri,</i>	to my Books.
Abl.	<i>da' miei Libri,</i>	from my Books.

FEMININE GENDER.

Singular.

Nom.	<i>la mia Serva,</i>	my Servant.
Gen.	<i>della mia Serva,</i>	of my Servant.
Dat.	<i>alla mia Serva,</i>	to my Servant.
Abl.	<i>dalla mia Serva,</i>	from my Servant.

Plural.

Nom.	<i>le mie Serve,</i>	my Servants.
Gen.	<i>delle mie Serve,</i>	of my Servants.
Dat.	<i>alle mie Serve,</i>	to my Servants.
Abl.	<i>dalle mie Serve,</i>	from my Servants.

*Note. I. The Article *il* is not put to the Pronouns, before Nouns of Quality or Kindred; for we say,*

*Your Majesty, *vostra Maestà*, not, *la vostra Maestà*. Of your Majesty, *di vostra Maestà*, not, *della vostra Maestà*.*

Also,

Also,

My Husband, *mio Marito*, not, *il mio Marito*.
 To my Husband, *a mio Marito*, not, *al mio Marito*.
 From my Husband, *da mio Marito*, not, *dal mio Marito*.

II. That if these Nouns of Quality or Kindred be of the Plural Number, the Definite Article *i* or *le* is detained ; as,

Their Highnesses, *le Altezze loro*, or, *le loro Altezze*.

Your Brothers, *i vostri Fratelli*, or, *i Fratelli vostri*.
 Of your Sisters, *delle vostre Sorelle*.

Pronouns Demonstrative, *This*, *That*, *These*, *Those*, are so called, as they serve to shew or demonstrate any Person, or the Thing spoken of ; as,

This Man, *questo*, or, *questo qui*.

This Woman, *questa*, or, *questa qui*.

Cestui Mas. and *costei* Fem. *Colui* Mas. and *colei* Fem. *This Man* or *Woman*, are also Pronouns Demonstrative, and used only when speaking of a Man, Woman, or other living Substance ; and that without any Substantive joined to them, and at the End of a Speech only, and never at the Beginning or Middle ; as, 'Tis for this Man, do not give it to that, *è per cestui, non lo date à colui*. Pay this Woman, send that away, *pagate costei, è rimandate colei*. And note, these Pronouns are chiefly used when speaking to Persons in a slighting manner :— *Cestui* and *costei* make *coftoro* Plur. *Colui* and *colei* make *coloro* Plur. Masc. and Fem.

Pronouns

Pronouns Interrogative serve to ask Questions ; as, *Who?* *What?* *Which?* *chi?* *che?* *quale.*

Who is it ? *chi è?*

Who told you so ? *chi v' hà detto questo?*

What Book is this ? *che libro è?*

What are you doing ? *che fate?*

What House is it ? *quale è la casa?*

Note. For the greater Beauty of Expression, *che* is often put for *quale* ; as,

What Man is that ? *che uomo è?*

Pronouns Relative, *That*, *Who*, *Which*, *Whose*, or, *Of whom*, are expressed by *che*, *chi*, *quale*, and *di cui*, or, *di chi*.

Observ. I. The Pronouns Relative, *that*, *who*, *which*, or *what*, are expressed by *che*, instead of *quale*, *quali*, *il quale* ; as,

The Book that teaches, *il libro che insegna.*

II. *Boccacio*, *Davilla*, and other the best Authors use *cui* *whose*, with the Article *il*, in the following manner of speaking ;

Whose fair Visage, *il cui bel viso*, or, *il di cui bel viso.*

Whose Beauties, *le cui bellezze*, or, *le di cui bellezze.*

To whose Brother, *al cui fratello*, or, *al di cui fratello.* And the like.

III. *Effò* he, himself, or, it, *Maf.* is a Pronoun Relative, as expressed in the *Table of Pronouns* ; and note, that *effò*, is for greater Elegance of Expression

pression put with *con* and *noi*, *voi*, *loro*, *lei*, &c. as, Along with us, *con esso noi*; along with them, *con esso loro*; along with him, *con esso feco*; along with me, *con esso meco*, &c.

General Observations concerning the PRONOUNS in Speaking.

1. **T**HE Affirmative, by which we affirm the Thing spoken of, when the *Italians* put the Pronoun before the Verb; as,

I give it you, *velo do.*

But if the Verb be of the Infinitive Mood, or a Participle with two Pronouns, the Pronouns are put after the Verb, and commonly joined to it, by cutting off the last Letter of the Verb; as,

For to shew it to him, *per mostrarglielo.*

Having seen them, *vedutili*, or *vedutele.*

2. The Affirmative-negative, when the Pronouns are put before or after the Verb, as in the simple Affirmative, putting *non* for *not*; as,

I do not give it you, *non velo do.*

3. The Question, when the Verb, if joined to a single Pronoun, is followed by the Pronoun; as,

Does he go? *Va egli?*

But if there be two or more Pronouns, the two last are put first, and the Personal Pronoun *I*, &c. is placed last; as,

Do I give it you? *Velo do io?*

The

[35]

The Question-negative is in like manner, and begins with *non* ; as,

Do not I give it you? *Non ve lo do io?*

4. The Imperative Mood in bidding or commanding, when the Pronouns are put after the Verb ; as,

Give it me, *datemelo.*

In the Imperative Negative, the Pronouns are put before the Verb, beginning with the Negative *non* ; as,

Do not give it him, *non glielo date.*

Note. The *Italians* use frequently the Infinitive Mood of Verbs, instead of the Imperative, in speaking to Inferiors ; as,

Do not tell this to any Man, *non dir questo a nessuno.*

In speaking to an Equal, the second Person Plural of the Indicative Mood, Present Tense ; as,

Do not go, for you will repent of it, *non andate, che ve ne pentirete.*

In speaking to a Superior, the third Person Singular of the Subjunctive Mood, Present Tense ; as,

Say not so I beseech you, *non dica questo per gratia.*

These few Examples are sufficient for the Learner's present Observation, as the right placing of the Pronouns in general is fully explained hereafter.

Of

*Of the Auxiliary VERBS *Havere* to have,
and *Essere* to be.*

IT is proper that the Learner be acquainted with these two *Auxiliary* Verbs, before he proceeds in his Compositions ; for this Reason they are here set down at the Beginning : And it is recommended to him, to make himself perfect in conjugating these two Verbs, as the true Formation of all other Verbs depend greatly on these two : And as few Persons set themselves to learn the *Italian* Tongue, without being first acquainted with the common Rules of Grammar in their own Native Tongue, or the *Latin* Language, I shall not take up their Time in explaining the Use of Moods and Tenses, but only remark, that Verbs in the *Italian* Tongue may be conjugated with or without the Pronouns at Pleasure ; though I chuse here to set them down to make the Learner more readily acquainted with them.

HAVERE, to have.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense, *do*.

Sing.	<i>Io hò,</i> <i>tu hai,</i> <i>egli ha,</i>	I have. thou hast. he has.
Plur.	<i>noi abbiamo,</i> <i>voi avete,</i> <i>egliano hanno,</i>	we have. ye have. they have.
		Imperfect

Imperfect Tense, *had*.

Sing.	<i>Io hauévo,</i> <i>tu hauévi,</i> <i>egli hauéva,</i>	I had. thou hadst. he had.
Plur.	<i>noi hauévamo,</i> <i>voi hauévate,</i> <i>eglino hauévano.</i>	we had. ye had. they had.

The Preterit, or Definite Tense, *had*.

Sing.	<i>Io hebbi,</i> <i>tu hauéfti,</i> <i>egli hebbe,</i>	I had. thou hadst. he had.
Plur.	<i>noi hauémmo,</i> <i>voi hauéste,</i> <i>eglino bebbera, or ebbono,</i>	we had. ye had. they had.

The Future Tense, *shall* or *will*.

Sing.	<i>Io haverò, or hauò,</i> <i>tu haverai, haurai,</i> <i>egli haverà, haurà,</i>	I shall or will have. thou shalt have. he shall have.
Plur.	<i>noi haverémo, haurémo,</i> <i>voi haveréte, hauréte,</i> <i>eglino haveránnو, hauránnو,</i>	we shall have. ye shall have. they shall have.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	<i>Hábbi, or habbi tú,</i> <i>búbbia, or ábbia egli,</i>	have thou. let him have.
-------	---	-----------------------------

Plur.	<i>habbiámo noi,</i>	let us have.
	<i>habbiáte voi,</i>	have ye.
	<i>babbiáno eglino,</i>	let them have.

Optative, or Subjunctive Mood.

Present Tense, *may* or *can*.

Sing.	<i>Ch' io habbia,</i>	that I may have.
	<i>ch' tu hábbi, or bábbia,</i>	that thou may'st have.
	<i>ch' egli hábbia,</i>	that he may have.
Plur.	<i>che noi habbiámo,</i>	that we may have.
	<i>che voi habbiáte,</i>	that ye may have.
	<i>ch' eglino habbiáno,</i>	that they may have.

Imperfect Tense, *should*, &c.

Sing.	<i>Io haveréi, or havrei,</i>	I should have.
	<i>tu haverésti,</i>	thou should'st have.
	<i>egli haverébbe,</i>	he should have.
Plur.	<i>noi haverémmo,</i>	we should have.
	<i>voi haveréste,</i>	ye should have.
	<i>eglino haverébbero, ha- veriano, haverebbono,</i>	they should have.

Preterit, or Definite Tense, *had*, *might*, &c.

Sing.	<i>Ch' io havéssi,</i>	that I had.
	<i>che tu havéssi,</i>	that thou hadst.
	<i>ch' egli havésse,</i>	that he had.
Plur.	<i>che noi havéssimo,</i>	that we had.
	<i>che voi havéste,</i>	that ye had.
	<i>ch' eglino havéssero,</i>	that they had.

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Havere, to Have.

Participle Common.

Havuto, Had.

Gerund.

Havendo, Having.

Note, By these Tenses, Verbs Active may be conjugated, as is observed in my RULES for the French Tongue, page 47, to which I refer the Reader; And here also by the Addition of the Participle Common *Havuto* Had, to the Tenses above conjugated, will be formed the several other Tenses or Parts of Time, which Grammarians frequently make use of; as will be seen in these following

COMPOUND TENSES of the VERB
Havere, to Have.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing. *Io hè havuto*, I have had.
tu hai havuto, thou hast had.
egli bà havuto, he has had.

Plur. *noi abbiamo havuto*, we have had.
voi havete havuto, ye have had,
egliano hanno havuto, they have had.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io havévo havuto,</i>	I had had.
	<i>tu havévi havuto,</i>	thou hast had.
	<i>egli havéva havuto,</i>	he has had.
Plur.	<i>noi havevámo havuto,</i>	we have had.
	<i>voi haveváte havuto,</i>	ye have had.
	<i>egli no havévano havuto,</i>	they have had.

Preterit, or Definite Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io hebbi havuto,</i>	I have had.
	<i>tu havesti havuto,</i>	thou hadst had.
	<i>egli hebbe havuto,</i>	he had had.
Plur.	<i>noi havevemmo havuto,</i>	we had had.
	<i>voi haveste havuto,</i>	ye had had.
	<i>egli no havebbero havuto,</i>	they had had.

Future Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io haverò havuto,</i>	I shall have had.
	<i>tu haverái havuto,</i>	thou shalt have had.
	<i>egli haverà havuto,</i>	he shall have had.
Plur.	<i>noi haverémo havuto,</i>	we shall have had.
	<i>voi haveréte havuto,</i>	ye shall have had.
	<i>egli no haverà havuto,</i>	they shall have had.

Optative, or Subjunctive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Cb' io habbia havuto,</i>	that I have had.
	<i>cb' tu habbia havuto,</i>	that thou hast had.
	<i>cb' egli habbia havuto,</i>	that he has had.
		Plur.

Plur. *ch' noi babbiamo havuto*, that we have had.
ch' voi babbiate havuto, that ye have had.
ch' eglius babbiano havuto, that they have had.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. *Io haveréi havuto*, I should have had.
tu haverésti havuto, thou should'st have had.
egli haverébbe havuto, he should have had.

Plur. *noi haverémmo havuto*, we should have had.
voi haverésti havuto, ye should have had.
eglino haverébbero havuto, they should have had.

Preterit, or Definite Tense.

Sing. *S' io haveréssi havuto*, If I had had.
se tu haveréssi havuto, if thou hadst had.
s' egli haveréssesse havuto, if he had.

Plur. *se noi haveréssimo havuto*, if we had had.
se voi haveréssete havuto, if ye had had.
s' eglino haveréssessero havuto, if they had had.

Infinitive Mood.

Havere havuto, to have had.

Participle.

Havendo havuto, having had.

*The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb
ESSERE, to be.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io sono,</i> <i>tu sei,</i> <i>egli è,</i>	I am. thou art. he is.
Plur.	<i>noi siamo,</i> <i>voi siete, or siete,</i> <i>egliamo sono,</i>	we are. ye are. they are.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io ero, or era,</i> <i>tu eri,</i> <i>egli era,</i>	I was. thou wert. he was.
Plur.	<i>noi erâmo,</i> <i>voi erâte,</i> <i>egliamo erano,</i>	we were. ye were. they were.

Preterit, or Definite Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io fui,</i> <i>tu fosti, or fosti,</i> <i>egli fu,</i>	I was. thou wert. he was.
Plur.	<i>noi fummo,</i> <i>voi foste, or fuste,</i> <i>egliamo furono,</i>	we were. ye were. they were.

The

The Future Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io farò,</i> <i>tu farai,</i> <i>egli farà,</i>	I shall or will be. thou shalt be. he shall be.
Plur.	<i>noi faremo,</i> <i>voi farete,</i> <i>egli no eglino faranno,</i>	we shall or will be. ye shall be. they shall be.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	<i>Sii tu,</i> <i>fia egli,</i>	Be thou. let him be.
Plur.	<i>siámo noi,</i> <i>siáte voi,</i> <i>siáno, or sieno eglino,</i>	let us be. be ye. let them be.

Optative, or Subjunctive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Ch'io fia,</i> <i>che tu fia, or fia,</i> <i>ch'egli fia,</i>	That I may be. that thou may'st be. that he may be.
Plur.	<i>che noi siámo,</i> <i>che voi siáte,</i> <i>ch'eglino siáno, or sieno,</i>	that we may be. that ye may be. that they may be.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io faréi, or faris,</i> <i>tu farésti, or faristi,</i> <i>egli farébbe, or faris, or faro,</i>	I should, or would be. thou should'st be. he should be.
		Plur.

Plur. *noi saremmo*, we should be.
vei sareste, ye should be.
egliano farebbero, they should be.

Preterit, or Definite Tense.

Sing. *Ch'io fossi*, That I were or might be.
che tu fossi, that thou were.
ch'egli fosse, that he were.

Plur. *che noi fossimo*, that we were.
che voi fossi, that ye were.
ch'egliano fossero, that they were.

Infinitive Mood.

Effere, to be.

Participle Active, or Common.

Stato Masc. *stata* Fem. Been.

Gerund.

Effendo, Being.

* * * The Compound Tenses of this Verb *Effere*, to be, are formed by a repetition of its own Tenses, with the Participle Common *stato* Masc. or *stata* Fem. as follows.

Indicative

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io sono stato,</i> <i>tu sei stato,</i> <i>egli è stato,</i>	I have been. thou hast been. he has been.
Plur.	<i>noi siamo stati,</i> <i>voi siete stati,</i> <i>egli sono stati,</i>	we have been. ye have been. they have been.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io ero stato,</i> <i>tu eri stato,</i> <i>egli era stato,</i>	I had been. thou hadst been. he had been.
Plur.	<i>noi eramo stati,</i> <i>voi erate stati,</i> <i>egli erano stati,</i>	we had been. ye had been. they had been.

Optative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Ch'io sia stato,</i> <i>che tu sii,</i> or <i>sia stato,</i> <i>ch'egli sia stato;</i>	That I have been. that thou hast been. that he has been.
Plur.	<i>che noi siamo stati,</i> <i>che voi siate stati,</i> <i>ch'egli siano stati,</i>	that we have been. that ye have been. that they have been.

Imperfect

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io sarei stato,</i>	I should or would have been.
	<i>tu saresti stato,</i>	thou should'st have been.
	<i>egli sarebbe stato,</i>	he should have been.
Plur.	<i>noi saremmo stati,</i>	we should have been.
	<i>voi sareste stati,</i>	ye should have been.
	<i>egli sarebbero stati,</i>	they should have been.

Preterit, or Definite Tense.

Sing.	<i>Se io fossi stato,</i>	If I had been.
	<i>se tu fossi stato,</i>	if thou hadst been.
	<i>s'egli fosse stato,</i>	if he had been.
Plur.	<i>se noi fossimo stati,</i>	if we had been.
	<i>se voi foste stati,</i>	if ye had been.
	<i>s'egli fossero stati,</i>	if they had been.

Infinitive Mood.

Essere stato, to have been.

Participle:

Essendo stato, having been.

Note. It is to be observed, that the Participle Common of this Verb, changes its Gender and Number, as Occasion requires; i. e. *Stato* Sing. *Stati* Plur. Masc. *Stata* Sing. *State* Plural. Fem.

Impersonals

Impersonal of the V E R B *Essere.*

Singular.

Plural.

There is, <i>c'è</i> or <i>v'è</i> .	There are, <i>ci sono</i> , <i>vi sono</i> .
There was, <i>c'era</i> .	There were, <i>c'erano</i> .
There was, <i>ci fu</i> .	There were, <i>ci furono</i> .
There has been, <i>c'è stato</i> .	There have been, <i>ci sono stati</i> .
There had been, <i>c'era stato</i> .	<i>C'erano stati</i> .
There shall be, <i>ci sarà</i> .	<i>Ci saranno</i> .
Let there be, <i>ci sia</i> .	<i>Ci siano</i> .
That there may be, <i>che ci sia</i> .	<i>Che ci siano</i> .
That there were, <i>che ci fosse</i> .	<i>Che ci fossero</i> .
There would be, <i>ci sarebbe</i> .	<i>Ci farebbero</i> .
That there has been, <i>che ci sia stato</i> Sing. <i>che ci siano stati</i> ; or, <i>vi siano stati</i> Plur.	
If there had been, <i>se ci sia</i> , or, <i>vi fosse stato</i> Sing. <i>ci</i> , or <i>vi fossero stati</i> Plur.	
That there had been, <i>che vi fosse stato</i> Sing. <i>che vi fossero stati</i> Plur.	
There would have been, <i>ci farebbe stato</i> Sing. <i>vi farebbero stati</i> Plur.	
When there has, or shall have been, <i>quando vi sarà stato</i> Sing. <i>quando vi saranno stati</i> Plur.	

There

There to have been, *esservi stato.*
In there having been, *essendovi stato.*

* * * Learners also find a Difficulty in expressing rightly in Italian the English Impersonals, *There is of it, or them ; There is not of it ; Is there of it ?* and the like. For their Ease therefore I shall here set down these Impersonals through all the Tenses, Singular and Plural.

There is of it, *cen'è, ven'è.*

There is of them, *cene sono, vene sono.*

There is not of it, *non cen'è ; non cene sono.*

Is there of it ? *cen'è ? cene sono ?*

Is there not of it ? *non cen'è ? non cene sono ?*

There was of it, *ven'era ; ven'erano.*

There was not of it, *non ven'era ; non ven'erano.*

Was there of it ? *ven'era ? ven'erano ?*

Was there not of it ? *non ven'era ? non ven'erano ?*

There was of it, *vene fù ; vene furono.*

There was not of it, *non vene fù ; non vene furono.*

Was there of it ? *vene fù ? vene furono ?*

Was there not of it ? *non vene fù ? non vene furono ?*

There shall be of it, *vene farà ; vene faranno.*

There shall not be of it, *non vene farà ; non vene faranno.*

Shall there be of it ? *vene farà ? vene faranno ?*

Shall there not be of it ? *non vene farà ? non vene faranno ?*

That there may be of it, *che vene sia ; che vene siano.*

There may not be of it, *che non vene sia ; che non vene siano.*

That

That there were of it, *che vene fosse*; *che vene fossero*.

There were not of it, *che non vene fosse*; *che non vene fossero*.

There would be of it, *vene sarebbe*; *vene sarebbero*.

There would not be of it, *non vene sarebbe*; *non vene sarebbero*.

Would there not be of it? *non vene sarebbe?* *non vene sarebbero?*

If there had been of it, *se vene fosse stato*; *se vene fossero stati*.

If there had not been of it, *se non vene fosse stato*; *se non vene fossero stati*.

Had there been of it? *vene sarebbe stato?* *vene sarebbero stati?*

Had there not been of it? *quando non vene sarebbe stato?* *or, quando non vene sarebbero stati?*

If there had been of it, *se vene fosse stato*; *or, se vene fossero stati*.

If there had not been of it, *se non vene fosse stato*; *se non vene fossero stati*.

There would have been of it, *vene sarebbe stato*; *vene sarebbero stati*.

There would not have been of it, *non vene sarebbe stato*; *non vene sarebbero stati*.

Would there have been of it? *vene sarebbe stato?* *vene sarebbero stati?*

Would there not have been of it? *non vene sarebbe stato?* *non vene sarebbero stati?*

There will be of it, *vene farà stato*; *vene saranno stati*.

There will not be of it, *non vene farà stato*; *non vene saranno stati*.

Will there be of it? *vene farà stato?* *vene saranno stati?*

Will there not be of it? *non vene farà stato?* *non vene saranno stati?*

For there having been too much of it, *per effervene stato troppo*.

In there having been too little of it, *effendovene stato troppo poco*.

Observe. I. If we speak of the Feminine Gender, we must put *stata* Sing. *state* Plur. in the Place of *stato*, *stati*.

II. *There of it, or them*, is expressed by *cene*, speaking of the Place in which we are present, *vene* in mentioning the Place where we are not, unless in Parts of Time, when *ne* only is expressed; as, How many Months is it? it is ten (of them) at least, *quanti mese sono?* *ne sono dieci al meno.*

III. If the Particle *ci* there, is followed by a Verb, it need not be expressed; as, He will see me there, *mi uedrà*; He will give it you there, *ti darà*.

R U L E S

FOR THE

Italian Tongue,

In E N G L I S H;

According to the Parts of Speech,
divided into Chapters.

To the LEARNER.

The constant Use of the Article II, before Nouns and Pronouns, in the Italian Tongue, will cause it often to occur in the following RULES: To avoid therefore the Inconvenience of a frequent Repetition, and the great Perplexity generally found in Grammars, the following Table is drawn up, wherein the Formation of that Article in its several Cases and Genders, before different Nouns, &c. is made easy, and at one View pointed out.

A TABLE of the Article *Il, The, It, &c.*

		Nom.	Gen.	Dat.	Accus.	Abl.
1. Before Nouns Masculine, beginning with a Consonant.	Sing. <i>il</i> Plur. <i>i, i</i>	<i>del</i> <i>dei, de</i>	<i>al</i> <i>ai, a</i>	<i>il</i> <i>i</i>	<i>dai</i> <i>dai, do</i>	<i>dai</i> <i>dai, do</i>
2. Before Nouns Mascul. beginning with the Letter <i>S</i> , followed by another Consonant.	Sing. <i>lo</i> Plur. <i>gli</i>	<i>dello</i> <i>degli</i>	<i>allo</i> <i>agli</i>	<i>lo</i> <i>gli</i>	<i>dallo</i> <i>dagli</i>	<i>dallo</i> <i>dagli</i>
3. Before Nouns Masculine, which begin with a Vowel, or the letter <i>H</i> ,	Sing. <i>l'</i> Plur. <i>gli, gl'</i> *	<i>dell'</i> <i>degli</i>	<i>all'</i> <i>agli</i>	<i>l'</i> <i>gli, gl'</i>	<i>dall'</i> <i>dagli</i>	<i>dall'</i> <i>dagli</i>
4. Before Nouns Feminine, which begin with a Consonant,	Sing. <i>la</i> Plur. <i>le</i>	<i>della</i> <i>delle</i>	<i>alla</i> <i>alle</i>	<i>la</i> <i>le</i>	<i>dalla</i> <i>dalle</i>	<i>dalla</i> <i>dalle</i>
5. Before Nouns Fem. which begin with a Vowel,	Sing. <i>l'</i> Plur. <i>le, l' +</i>	<i>dell'</i> <i>delle, del'</i>	<i>all'</i> <i>alle, all'</i>	<i>l'</i> <i>le, l'</i>	<i>dall'</i> <i>dalle, dall'</i>	<i>dall'</i> <i>dalle, dall'</i>

* Note *gli* in the Plural is not apostrophed, unless the following Noun begins with an *I*; as *gli ingegni, gli ordini, gli honor*. + his Article *le* is apostrophed in the Plural only, before a Word beginning with *E*; as *le anime, l'emente*.

C H A P. I.

Of ARTICLES and NOUNS.

R U L E L

LET it be observed, that the *Italian Tongue* in general takes an Article before the Noun, with some few Exceptions only, which will occur in these *Rules*; and the Article agrees with the Noun in Number and Gender, as in *Latin* and other Languages.

Exception from this Rule, if a Verb and the Noun following may be turned by a Verb only, in *Latin*, then no Article is put before the Noun.

Example. I take pleasure, *hò gusto*.
I am dry, *hò sete*.

R U L E H.

All Noun Substantives, taken in a total Sense, have before them the Article *il*, *lo* Masc. Sing. before a Noun beginning with an *S* and another Consonant, *l'* before a Vowel or the Letter *h*; *la* Fem. The Plural of *il* is *i*, and sometimes *li*; *lo* makes *gli*, *l'* makes *gl'*, *la* makes *le*, which sometimes loses its *e* before another *e*.

Ex. I love Fire, *amo il fuoco*.
The Scholar studies, *lo scolare studia*.

54 Of Articles and Nouns. Ch. I.

The Lady is agreeable, *la donna è dolce.*

Children are obedient, *i fanti sono ubbidienti.*

Instruments of Musick, *gl' instrumenti di musica.*

The Souls of the Blessed, *le anime de' beati.*

N. B. The Articles being fully set down in the *Table of Articles*, they will not be any more particularly mentioned, but Reference will be made to that Table.

R U L E III.

Names of Rivers and Mountains take the Article *the* before them; also the Names of Kingdoms, if they have not *in* before them.

Ex. Thames is rich, *la Tamisa è ricca.*

Ætna burns, *l' Ætna abbrucia.*

Italy is pleasant, *l' Italia è dilettevole.*

He is in Spain, *è in Spagna.*

R U L E IV.

When the *Italians* make use of the words *il Signor* or *la Signora*, before Nouns of Office or Dignity, they put no other Article before the Nouns of Office or Dignity; but if they use the word *Monsignor*, the Article *il* or *lo* is put before the following Noun.

Ex. My Lord Bishop of Rochester, *il Signor Vescovo di Rochester*, or, *Monsignor il Vescovo di Rochester.*

My Lord Keeper of the Seals, *il Signor guarda Sigilli.*

R U L E

R U L E V.

If a proper Name be before Nouns of Dignity and Office, no Article is put before either of them.

Ex. Thomas, Bishop of Rochester, Dean of Westminster,

Tommaso, Vescovo di Rochester, Decano di Westminster.

R U L E VI.

A or *an*, before Parts of Time, Measures and Weights, are expressed by *il*, *lo*, *la*, &c. as in the *Table of Articles*.

Ex. How many times a Week, *quante volte la settimana.*

How much an Ounce, *quanto l' oncia.*

The Yard, *la verge.*

R U L E VII.

In the, before Parts of Time, is expressed by the Articles *il*, *lo*, &c. as in the *Table*, or else by the Article *nel* in the *.

Ex. In the Year Ninety-nine, *l' anno, or, nell' anno nonanta nove.*

* The Article *nel* changes its Gender and Number in this wise: Sing. *nel*, *nello* before *S* and a Consonant, Masc. *nella* Fem. *nell'* before a Vowel. Plur. *nei*, *ne'*, *negli* before *S* and a Consonant, Masc. *nelle* Fem. *negl'* before a Vowel.

56 Of Articles and Nouns. Ch. I.

R U L E VIII.

The Articles are put before *Prohibitis Possessive*, and not before the Noun that follows; *Vide* Page 30.

Ex. My Father, *il mio Padre*.

His Friends, *i suoi amici* M. *le sue amiche* F.

R U L E IX.

Participles in *Eng. in English*, having *the* or other Article before them, and when turned in *Italian* by the Infinitive Mood, take before the Infinitive of the Verb the same Articles as Substantives do.

Ex. The Rising of the Sun, *il levare del Sole*.

At the King's Rising, *al levare del Re*.

R U L E X.

Nouns Substantives, having *of*, *from*, *any* or *some*, before them, expressed or not, and taken in particular, require in *Italian* the Article *del* * before them: But if the Noun may be taken in general, no Article is necessary.

Ex. He sells Wine, *vende del vino*, or, *vino*.

Bring some Beer, *portate della biera*.

* The Article *del* changes its Gender and Number in this wise: Sing. *del*, *dello* before S and a Consonant, Mas. *della* F. *dell'* before a Vowel. Plur. *delli*, *de'*, *degli* M. *delle* F. *degli* before a Vowel. Note, *de'* is better used than *delli* in the Plural, as in the fifth Example.

Give

Of Articles and Nouns. 57.

Give me some Mackrell, *datemi dello scombro.*
The Spirit of Man, *lo Spirito dell' uomo.*
The Eminence of Cardinals, *l' eminenza de' Cardinali.*
The Harmony of Instruments, *la simfonia degl' strumenti.*
She wears Gloves, *porta guanti.*
He eats Pies, *mangia pasticciotti.*

R U L E XI.

With the, before Nouns, followed by Verbs, is *del* Masc. &c. as in the foregoing Rule; and with singlē is *di*: But if *with* expresses a Society, or Conjunction of Nouns, and when in *Latin* is made by *cum*, in *Italian* it is *co*. *With the*, with *my*, *with his*, or other Pronouns, are expressed by *co'l* Masc. *

Ex. He received me with the best manners, *mi riceve della più bella maniera.*
She weeps with Joy, *piange di allegrezza.*
Cream with Sugar and Wine, *la crema co'l zucchero et co'l vino.*
With my Books, *co' miei libri.*

With me, is *meco*, with you *con te*, with him *con lui*, with us *con noi*, with ye or you *con voi*, with them *con loro.*

* The Article *co'l* changes its Gender and Number in this manner: Sing. *co'l*, *collo* before S and a Consonant, *Masc. colo Fem. col* before a Vowel. Plur. *co'l*, *colli* before S and a Consonant, *Masc. colli Fem. colle* before a Vowel.

R U L E

58 . Of Articles and Nouns. Ch. I.

R U L E XII.

In the, after a Comparison, or the Superlative Degree, is expressed by *of the*, *del*, &c. as in Rule 10. Also in the same Sense, *in* is turned by *di*.

Ex. The best in the World, *il miglior del mondo.*
The finest in England, *il più squisito d'Inghilterra.*

R U L E XIII.

The Verbs *godere* to enjoy, *ringratiare* to thank, and all Verbs reciprocal, which have the Particle *si* before them in the Dictionary, take *del*, &c. as in Rule 10. after them, before the Substantives, and *di* before Pronouns and proper Names; and the Particle *ne*, which has the same Meaning as *en* in French, is made use of in the room of the Pronouns Personal *of*, *for*, *from*, *at him*, *ber*, *it*, &c.

Ex. I thank you for the Book, *la ringratio del libro.*

She distrusts the Company, *si disfida della compagnia.*

We thank her for it, *ne lo ringratiamo.*

We laugh at him, *ci burliamo di lui*, or, *ce ne burliamo.*

R U L E XIV.

When a Verb and a Noun in *English* may both be rendered by a Verb only in *Latin*, the Nouns take not an Article before it.

Ex.

Of Articles and Nouns 59

Ex. I have a Mind, *ho voglia, desio, cupio* Lat.
We take Pleasure, *babbiamo gusto, delecta-*
mur Lat. See RULE I.

R U L E XV.

Adverbs of Quantity, when turned into Adjectives, are put in the same Gender and Number, as the Substantives that follow; otherwise the Adverb takes *of* or *than* after it, which are expressed by *di*.

Ex. Much Beauty, *molta bellezza,*
Little Wit, *il poco di spirito.*
More than five hundred Pounds, *più di cinque*
cento lire.

R U L E XVI.

Adjectives of good, and bad Qualities, are put before the Substantives, and if they have not *The* before them, the Article *di* is put before the Adjective; but if they be in a general Sense, no Article is put to the Plural Number.

Ex. We drink bad Wine, *beviamo di cattivo vino.*
The English eat good Bread, *i Inglesi mangi-*
ano di buon pane.
They sell Pastry, *vendono pasticcietti.*

R U L E XVII.

Adjectives of Colours, Nations, Elemental Qualities, and Participles Common, are put after the Substantives, without an Article before the Adjective.

Ex.

do Of Articles and Nouns. Ch. I.

*Ex. I have red Wine, *ho vino*, or, *del vino rosso*.*

*An Italian Book, *un libro italiano*.*

*She drinks cold Water, *beve dell' aqua tepida*.*

R U L E XVIII.

*Of and from, before Pronouns and proper Names, are turned by *di*; but if the Noun be in the Ablative Case, or after a Verb of Motion, *da* is made use of. *Of the and from the*, are *dall'* Masc. &c.*

*Ex. Of my Mother, *di*, or, *da mia madre*.*

*I return from Paris, *torno di Parigi*.*

*I have received of the Gentleman, *ho ricevuto dal Signor*.*

*Get you from me, *scotatevi da me*.*

*To separate one from the other, *separare l' un dall' altro*.*

R U L E XIX.

*Nouns Substantives, having *as* or *to* before them, expressed or understood, are turned by *to the*, which in Italian is *al* + Masc.*

*Ex. I go to Market, *vò al mercato*.*

*He is at Church, *è alla chiesa*.*

* The Article *dall'* changes its Genders and Numbers in this wise: Sing. *dal*, *dallo* before S and a Consonant, Masc. *dalla* Fem. *dall'* before a Vowel. Plur. *da*, *dagli* before S and a Consonant, Masc. *dalle* Fem. *dagli* before a Vowel.

+ *Al* makes its Genders and Numbers in this wise: Sing. *al*, *allo* before S and a Consonant, Masc. *alla* Fem. *all'* before a Vowel. Plur. *a*, *agli* before S and a Consonant, Masc. *alle* Fem. *agli* before a Vowel.

R U L E

R U L E XXI.

In the, into the, age of M, &c. as in the foregoing Rule; but if they may be turned by within the, they are expressed by nel, as in the seventh Rule.

Ex. He is in the Country, *è alla campagna.*

Put the Horses into the Coach, *mettete i cavalli alla carrozza.*

He is in the Room, *è nella camera.*

He is merry in the Gardens, *è piacevole nei, or, ne' giardini.*

R U L E XXI.

To, before names of Kingdoms, and the word Town, is expressed by in after all Verbs.

Ex. He goes to Italy, *viene in Italia.*

She is come to town, *è venuta in città.*

Into also, in the same Sense, is expressed by in.

Ex. He will go into Flanders, *anderà in Fiandra.*

R U L E XXII.

To, before Pronouns and proper Names, is expressed by a or in.

Ex. I will write to my Lord, *scrivere a il mio Signor.*

He is come to Rome, *è giunto in Roma.*

R U L E XXIII.

To Night, At Night, are expressed by stà sera, or alla sera: Also, At Noon is al mezzo dì.

Ex. I will see you at Night, vi vederò stà sera, or, alla sera. At Noon, al mezzo dì.

R U L E XXIV.

Nouns of Number take no Article before them, except Parts of Time.

Ex. Ten Pounds, dieci lire.

Twenty Men, vinti buomini.

Three hundred and one Soldiers, trecento ed un soldato.

Five Hours, le cinque hore.

At Ten o'Clock, alle dieci hore.

Thè fifth, il quinto M. la quinta F.

C H A P. II.

Of PRONOUNS POSSESSIVE,
and ABSOLUTE.

R U L E I.

Pronouns Possessive, and Absolute, take the same Articles as Nouns Substantives.

E X A M P L E.

Singular.

Plural.

Mas. Fem.

Mas. Fem.

Mine, my,	<i>il mio,</i>	<i>la mia.</i>	<i>i miei,</i>	<i>le mie.</i>
Thine, thy,	<i>il tuo,</i>	<i>la tua.</i>	<i>i tuoi,</i>	<i>le tue.</i>
His, hers,	<i>il suo;</i>	<i>la sua.</i>	<i>i suoi,</i>	<i>le sue.</i>
Our,	<i>il nostro,</i>	<i>la nostra.</i>	<i>i nostri,</i>	<i>le nostre.</i>
Your,	<i>il vostro,</i>	<i>la vostra.</i>	<i>i vostri,</i>	<i>le vòstre.</i>
Their,	<i>il loro,</i>	<i>la loro.</i>	<i>i loro,</i>	<i>le loro.</i>

Sing.

Plur.

Of, or, from	<i>del</i>	<i>del mio M.</i>	<i>de' miei M.</i>
mine.	<i>de'</i>	<i>della mia F.</i>	<i>delle mie F.</i>
Of his, hers,	<i>dal</i>	<i>dal suo M.</i>	<i>dà' suoi M.</i>
it's.	<i>dal</i>	<i>dalla sua F.</i>	<i>dalle sue F.</i>
To mine,	<i>al</i>	<i>al mio M.</i>	<i>a' miei M.</i>
	<i>alla</i>	<i>alla mia F.</i>	<i>alla mie F.</i>

In Page 37, it is remarked, that the Article is not always put before Pronouns Possessive Absolute, when the Noun it agrees with is of Singular Number: To what is there mentioned let it be here added, that these Pronouns Absolute, 'tis *mine*, &c. take not also the Article before them, but we must say,

Singular. Plural.

Mas.	Fem.	Mas.	Fem.
------	------	------	------

'tis mine,	è <i>mio</i> ,	è <i>mia</i> ,	sono <i>miei</i> , sono <i>mi</i> .
'tis thine,	è <i>tuo</i> ,	è <i>tua</i> ,	son <i>tuo</i> , son <i>tue</i> .
'tis his,	è <i>suo</i> ,	è <i>sua</i> ,	son <i>suoi</i> , son <i>sue</i> .
'tis ours,	è <i>nostro</i> ,	è <i>nostra</i> ,	son <i>nostri</i> , son <i>nostri</i> .
'tis yours,	è <i>vostro</i> ,	è <i>vostra</i> ,	son <i>vostri</i> , son <i>vostri</i> .
'tis theirs,	è <i>loro</i> ,	è <i>loro</i> ,	son <i>loro</i> , son <i>loro</i> .



The

For the
here be a
an: And
i thought

V. S. or,

or, non

ie Speech
he Express-
e Verb in-
is always
V. S. ba
id the fre-
uas ella or
elle, ella,
lei, la.
le signorie
de signorie

RULE

-- In Pej
is not a
Absolute
Singular
let it be
lute, 'n
before t

'tis mine
'tis thine
'tis his,
'tis ours
'tis you
'tis their

C H A P. III.

Of PRONOUNS.

RULE I.

ALL Personal Pronouns are put before the Verb in the Affirmative; and if there be a Negative, *Non* is put before the Pronoun: And note, the second Person Plural is used, though speaking to a single Person. *

Ex. I give it you, *velo dò*, or, *lo dò à V. S.* or,
le lo dò.
 I do not lend it you, *non velo presto*, or, *non
 le lo presto.*

* For greater Civility, and to render the Speech more agreeable, the *Italians* frequently turn the Expression, and use the third Person Singular of the Verb instead of the second, with *Signor*, which is always wrote by *V. S.* As, You are in the right of it, *V. S. bâ ragione*, and not *havete ragione*. And to avoid the frequent Repetition of *V. S.* the Personal Pronouns *ella* or *lei* are made use of in all their Cases, viz. Nom. *elle*, *ella*, Gen. *delle*, *di lei*, Dat. *à lei*, *h.*, Act. *ella*, *lei*, *la*, Abl. *della*, *da lei*; and in the Plural Number, *le signorie loro*, *delle signorie loro*, *alle signorie loro*, *dalle signorie loro*.

R U L E II.

Personal Pronouns are put after the Verb in the Imperative and Infinitive Moods, also with a Participle; but if the Imperative Mood be a Negative, the Pronoun is put before the Verb, and the Negative *non* begins the Sentence: And note, the last Vowel of the Infinitive Mood is taken away before Pronouns.

Ex. Shew it me, *mostrate me lo*, or, *mostrati me lo*
V. S.

For to give it you, *per darvelo*.

Having seen it, *havendo lo veduto*.

Do not tell it me, *non me lo dite*.

R U L E III.

In a Question, if there be but one Personal Pronoun, it is seldom expressed, and the Sound of the Voice rather shews the Question.

Ex. Does he go? *va egli?*
Is he gone? *è andato?*

R U L E IV.

In a Question, *It*, and the Pronouns which are put before the Verb in *French*, are in the like manner put before the Verb in *Italian*; and the Pronoun after the Verb is not expressed; if there be a Negative, *non* is put at the Beginning.

Ex.

PARAGRAPHS

Ex. Does he send it me? *me lo invia*?
Does he not lend it me? *non me lo presta*?

A Rehearsal of the foregoing Rules

1. { I lend it you, *velo presto*?
I do not give it you, *non vele dare*?
2. { do I lend it you? *velo presto*?
I do not you lend it me? *non me lo presta*?
3. { give it me, *date melo*.
I do not give it me, *non vele darlo*?
4. { does he go? *và egli*?
Who has or she gone? *M. andare*? *F.*
2. { I come to see you, *vengo a vederti*, or *vederla*?
having seen him, *bavendo to veduto*.

Rule VI.

When the Participle Common denotes the Time past, it is always put the last of the Sentence, except it be an Adverb.

Ex. I have never seen him, *non l' ho mai veduto*.
I have known him very well, *I l' ho cognosciuto benissimo*.

R U L E VI.

The Participle Common bearing Relation to a Noun before mentioned, and also coming after *who*,

who, whom, he, she, him, her, them, is put in the same Gender and Number as the Nouns and Pronouns.

Ex. The Beauty is dead, *la belle è morta.*
Have you seen her? *l'avevo veduta, or vista?*
The Gentleman is come, "have you seen him? *il Gentiluomo è venuto, l'avevi visto?*

R U L E VII.

What, and which, in a Question are expressed by *che*.

What, or which, being turned by *che* which, governing the Verb, is *cio che*, or *quel che*; but if it relates to what goes before, they are expressed by *il che*.

That which, governed by the Verb, is *quel che*.

Ex. Which Man, *cio buono.*

What News, *che nuovo.*

What do you? *che fate?*

At what do you play? *a che giocate?*

What is written, is written, *quel che è scritto,*
è scritto.

I have heard of your Misfortune, which afflicts me, *ho sentito della vostra sventura,*
il che m'affanno.

R U L E

GRAMMATIC.

R U L E VIII.

This, and *That*, before Nouns, are expressed in this wise:

This. *That.*

Singular. Singular.

* *questo* M. *quel* M. *quello* before S and a Con-
questa F. *quella* F. *quanto*.

Plural. Plural.

questi M. *quelli, quei, quegli* M.
queste F. *quelle* F.

This, before the Time of the Day, is *lo* M.
sta F.

That, between two Verbs, either expressed or understood, is *che*.

That alone is *questo*; or if *That* begins the Discourse, it is *cio*.

This, turned by *whom*, is *cio*; in a Question *chi*,

That, turned by *whom*, is *che*.

Ex. *This* Man, or Thing, *questo huomo*, or, *questo qui*.

This Woman, or Thing, *questa*, or, *questa qui*.

This Morning, *sta* mane.

I believe I shall go, *credo ch' andrò*.

Give me *that*, *datomi questo*.

That Woman that was here, and *that* you saw,
quella donna ch'era, qui e che vedeste.

Questo is used in shewing the Thing near at hand;
quel in shewing, or speaking, of a Thing at a Distance.

R U L E

R U L E IX.

This, That, in Comparison, or relating to a Noun before going, are expressed in this wise:

This.

Singular.

*questo, cotesto M.
questa, cotesta F.*

That.

Singular.

*quel, quello M.
quelle F.*

Plural.

*questi, cotesti M.
queste, coteste F.*

Plural.

*quelli, quei, que', quegli M.
quelle F.*

Ex. This Ring is better than that Ring, questo anello è miglior di quell anello.

That time and this time are two, quel tempo e questo sono duei.

R U L E X.

This, That, without Nouns, in Comparison, and in reference to a Noun before mentioned, are also thus turned:

This.

Singular.

*questo M. questa F.
questui M. costoi F.*

That.

Singular.

*quel, quello M. quella F.
colui M. colui F.*

Plural.

*questi M. queste F.
coftoro M. F.*

Plural.

*quelli, quei M. quelle F.
coloro M. F.*

** For the use of *quei*, see Page 32.*

Ex.

Ex. This is honest. (speaking of a Woman) and that is naught, *quista è honesta, e quella cattiva.*

This Book and that are the best, *questo libro e quel sono i migliori.*

R U L E XI.

That, being in Comparison, or relating to another Noun before mentioned, is expressed in this wise:

That.

Singular.

quel, quello M.

quella F.

Those.

Plural:

quegli, quegli M.

quelle F.

Ex. This Picture is better than that of the other Room, *quell ritratto è miglior di quel dell'altra camera.*

R U L E XII.

He who, She who, are expressed by *chi*.

Ex. He who loves me follows me, *chi mi ama, mi segue.*

Note. If *who* or *that*, do not immediately follow the Pronoun, but are relative thereto in the same Sentence, *He* is expressed by *colui*, or, *egli*; *She* by *colei*, or, *ella che*; the Plural *they whom*, &c. by *chi*, or, *coloro che*.

Ex. She is wise that keeps the House, *i. e.* stays at Home, *colei è savia che si tienne in casa.*

R U L E

has (now) a double sign, and is to be read as *they* when a plural Verb is used.

They, is frequently in *Italian* expressed by *si*, and the Verb that follows is most commonly the third Person Singular, unless the Noun that follows be of the Plural Number, in which case the Verb is also put in the Plural Number; and note, that this Pronoun, *si* may be put before or after the Verb indifferently.

Ex. They say, *si dice*, or, *dicesi*; they speak, *si parla*, or, *parlasi*.

They say things, *si dicono cose*.

The Pronouns Conjunctive, *mi*, *ti*, *si*, *gli*, *vi*, are placed before *they* in *Italian*; but *with* them is put after the Verb.

Ex. They tell me, *mi si dice*; they tell them, *si dice loro*.

The Articles *him*, *it*, *her*, *them*, &c. are not expressed after the Particle *si*.

Ex. They say it, *si dice*, and not *si si dice*.

They believe them, *si credono*, and not *si cre-
dano loro*.

The Verb *to have*, with a Participle Common coming after *they*, is turned by *to be*, and agrees with the Noun that follows.

Ex. They have taken many Ships, *si sono prese
molte navi*.

They

They not, is expressed by non si.

Ex. They do not speak, non si parla.

They not of it, is expressed by non sene.

Ex. They do not talk of it, non sene parla.

*They us of it, they you of it, they him of it, &c. with a Verb, the Verb is turned to the Participle Common, and the Verb *effere* or *venire* is put before the Participle in all the Tenses.*

Ex. They speak to us of it, cene vienne parlato.

They speak to him of it, gliene vien parlato.

They promise me some, mene sono promessi, or, mene vien promesso.

*Note here, The Verb *venire* is more elegantly used than *effere*.*

*Note also, I. When the Conjunctive Pronouns come after the Particle *si*, and the Verb that follows has neither Noun or Case after it, the Phrase must be changed, and *si* not expressed.*

Ex. They ask for me, sono domandato ; I am asked for.

They seek you, siete cercato ; you are sought for.

They will praise us, faremo lodati ; we shall be praised.

*II. Si they, or, it is, takes not *del*, or other Article after it, unless *del* signifies concerning.*

Ex. They see Men, si vedono uomini.

They speak of War, si parla della guerra.

Farther, *They* is expressed in this wise :

They gave me a Book, *mi fu data un libro*; a Book was given to me.

They wrote us a Letter, *ci fu scritta una lettera*; a Letter was wrote to us.

They sent for us to Rome, *fummo mandati à Roma*; we were sent for to Rome.

Also Remark, when *si* they, is put after a Verb that is accented, the Letter *s* is doubled, and the Accent taken away; as,

Fassi for *si fâ*, they do.

Dirassi for *si dirâ*, they will say.

R U L E XIV.

The *Italians*, as well as the *French*, always repeat the Noun, of which they have spoken before, but to avoid tedious repetitions, they make use of the Personal Pronouns *lo* M. *la* F. *lo* Plur. M. and F. also *vi* and *ne*; the three first go with the Verb *sono* I am.

Ex. He is poor, I am so too, *è povero, lo sono anch' io.*

Vi us, and *ci* you, are both Personal Pronouns, and also Adverbs; and in *Italian* are put for *by it*, *by them*, *in it*, *to it*, *to them*, *on it*, *on them*, *there*, *thither*, *therein*, and *thereunto*. Vide Table of Pronouns, and Page 47.

Ex. I get by it, *vi guadagno.*

She reads in it, *vi legge.*

Go you thither, *andate vi.*

Thou hast dined there, *ci or vi hai pransato.*

We are there, *ci siamo.*

Ne also is a Personal Pronoun, and an Adverb, and with Verbs is put for *of*, *from*, *to*, *at him*, *her*, *it*, *them*, *for it*, *some*, *any*, *hence thence*, &c. Vid Table of Pronouns, and Page 48.

Ex. I have some, *ne bò*.

Will you have any? *ne volete?*

I receive from her, *ne recevo.*

What do you say to it? *che ne dice?*

In promising them some, *promittendone loro.*

R U L E XV.

Of whom, whose, are expressed by *di chi* or *di cui*, but if the Article *the* follows *of whom*, &c. we put *il di cui*, or *il cui*, M. *la di cui*, *la cui* F. Sing. *i di cui*, or *i cui* M. *le di cui*, or *le cui* M. Plur.

Ex. Whose Name I know not, *di chi*, or, *il di cui nome non sò.*

Whose Beauties, *le cui bellezze*, or, *le di cui bellezze.*

From whose Brother I have received, *dal cui*, or, *dal di cui fratello bò ricevuto.*

The Favours of whom, *i di cui favori.*

R U L E XVI.

Of whom, and to whom, in a Question, are expressed by *da chi* and *à chi*.

Ex. Of whom do you know it? *da chi lo sapete?*
To whom do you speak? *à chi parlate?*

R U L E XVII.

What, and That, are always che.

Ex. What news is stirring ? *che si dice di nuovo ?*
 What do they say Abroad ? *di che si parla ?*
 The Book that I read, *il libro che leggo.*

Note, I. *Che* sometimes signifies *because*, especially when after the Negative *non*.

Ex. Do not drink it, because it will hurt you, *non lo bevete, che vi farà male.*

II. *He that*, is expressed by *chi*, rather than *quel che*.

Ex. He that says this has reason, *che dice questo ha ragione.*

* * * Before I conclude this Chapter, it will be proper to add a few Remarks.

I. Whereas the Pronouns *mi* myself, *ti* thyself, *si* himself, &c. when joined to the Articles *lo*, *la* it, or *ne* of it, change the *i* into *e*; as, *melo* to me it, *tene* thee of it, *sene* himself of it, as is shewn, *Page 29.* So is it to be particularly noticed of the Pronoun *gli* to him, or her, that whenever it is joined to the above Articles, it takes the Letter *e* after it before the Article, and make *glielo* to him it, *gliene* to him of it, &c.

Ex. To give it to him, *per darglielo*, not *dargli*.

To give it to her, *per dargliela.*

You

You shall give them to him, *glieli renderete.*

You shall ask him for some, *gliene domandete.*

You shall speak to him of it, *gliene parlerete.*

II. When a Pronoun **Conjunctive**, in *Italian*, is preceeded by *si*, *it is* or *they*; as, *they me*, *they thee*, *they him*, &c. the Pronouns *me*, *thee*, *him*, &c. are transposed, that is, put before the Pronoun Personal.

Ex. They tell me, *mi si dice*, not *si mi dice.*

They tell thee, *ti si dice*, not *si ti dice.*

They tell him, *gli si dice*.

III. The following Words, *me some*, or *of it*; *thee some*, or *of it*; *him some*, or *of it*; *us some*, *you some*, &c. are expressed by *mene*, *tene*, *senie*, *gliene*, *cene*, *vene*, &c. *Vide Page 29.*

IV. *They us of it*, *they you of it*, *they him of it*, *they me of it*, *they thee of it*, &c. are frequently turned in the Expression in *Italian*, and rendered by the Verbs *essere* and *venire*.

Ex. They will speak to us of it, say, It will be spoken of to us, *cene farà parlato.*

They will write to you of it, say, You will be written to of it, *vene farà scritto.*

They speak to him of it, *gliene vien parlato.*

They promise me some, *mene sono promessi.*

See before Page 75.

C H A P. IV.

Of VERBS and PARTICIPLES.

R U L E I.

VERBS Reciprocal, or that take *myself*, *himself*, *herself*, &c. with them, require the Pronoun to be before them, and the Verb *have* is changed into the Verb *am*.

Ex. I make haste, *mi affretto*.

He kills himself, *si ammazza*.

He has wondered, *s'è maravigliato*.

To raise himself, [in the Infinitive] *levarsi*.

R U L E II.

My, *thy*, *his*, *her*, *our*, *your*, *their*, before a Part of the Body, or the Word *Mind*, are turned by *myself*, *thyself*, *bimself*, &c. and the Article *the* or *to the* is put before the Part expressed.

Ex. I wash my Hands, *mi lavo le mani*.

The Wine makes his Head ake, *il vino gli fa mal al capo*.

I kiss your Hands, *vi, or, le bacio le mani*.

He has put to his Mind, *s'è messo nell' immagine*.

R U L E

R U L E III.

The *Italians* make use of the Verb Reciprocal, instead of the Verb Passive, which is put in the third Person, either Singular or Plural, as the Noun requires.

Ex. Things are doing slowly, *le cose si fanno piano.*
Books are sold, *si vendono libri*, or, *i libri si vendono.*

R U L E IV.

It is, it was, it has been, are turned by è, era, fù, and the other third Persons of the Verb sono.

Ex. It is Time, *è tempo.*
It is the Time, *è il tempo.*
It was five o'Clock, *erano le cinque borse.*
It is we, *fiamonoi.*

R U L E V.

*He is a, she is a, are expressed by è un M.
è una F. and by the third Persons of the Verb sono I am.*

Ex. He is a Man of Business, *è uomo d'affari.*
She is a fine brown Woman, *è bella bruna.*

R U L E VI.

They are, is expressed by sono, the third Person Plural of the Verb essere to be.

Ex. They are Soldiers, *sono soldati.*
They are good for nothing, *non sono buone.*

R U L E

R U L E VII.

It is, in speaking of the Weather, is expressed by *fà*, the third Person Singular of the Verb *fare*, and in a Question; but otherways, if the Noun comes before the Verb, *it is* or *are*, are *è* or *sono*.

Ex. It is cold, *fà freddo*.

The Weather is hot, *il tempo è caldo*.

What Weather is it? *che tempo fà?*

The Streets are dirty, *le strade sono sparche*.

R U L E VIII.

Am, and its Tenses, before these four Qualities of the Body, *hot*, *cold*, *dry*, *hungry*, are expressed by the Verb *haver* to have; *dry* is turned by thirst *fete* F. and *hungry* by hunger *fame* F.

Ex. I am cold, *bò freddo*.

I am dry, *bò fete*.

R U L E IX.

The *Italians* make use of the Verb *andare* to go, and the Verb following to be rendered by the Gerund in *do*, for Verbs of Motion, and the Verb *andare* is put in the same Tense that the Gerund ought to be.

Ex. I will accompany him, *anderò accompagnando*.

Stare to stand, is in like manner made use of for Words of Rest, with the Gerund in *do*, or an Infinitive with *à* or *ad* before it.

Ex. He studies, *stà studiando*, or, *stà à studiare*.

R U L E X.

The Verb *ought* is rendered by *dovere*.

Ex. I ought, or, must go, *devo*, or, *debbo andare*.

R U L E XI.

The Verb *may* or *can*, is rendered by *potere*.

Ex. May I speak ? *posso jo parlare* ?
That you may, *lo potete*.

R U L E XII.

The Particle *should*, in laying an Obligation or Duty, is turned by *ought*; *doverei*, *doveresti*, *doverebbe*, *doveremmo*, *dovereste*, *doverebbero*.

Ex. You should go to see him, *dovereste andar à vederlo*.

R U L E XIII.

Might, implying a Power, is expressed by *potero*, *poterei*, *potessi*.

Ex. He prayed me he might come, *me pregò che potesse venire*.

R U L E

R U L E XIV.

The Definite Tense of Verbs, which is the third Tense of the Indicative Mood, is used in expressing an Action past, and in relating a Story.

Ex. I saw him yesterday, *lo viddi hieri.*

The King took *Namur*, *il Ré pigliò Namurco.*

R U L E XV.

The Indefinite Tense is turned by the Verbs *have* or *am*, and the Participle Common, when we express an Action from Morning to Midnight; and when *this* or *these* are before a Part of Time.

Ex. I saw him to-day, *l' hò veduto oggi.*

R U L E XVI.

To, before an Infinitive, is expressed by *di*, after a Noun, or a Verb governing the Genitive or Ablative Case in *Latin*: And when we can turn *to* by ~~of~~ *or from*, and the Infinitive into a Participle in *ing*. *To* is also *da* after a Verb that governs an Ablative Case.

Ex. He is worthy to speak, *or*, of speaking, *è digne di parlare.*

She hinders me to go, *or*, from going, *m' impedisce d' andare.*

I am glad to see you, *hò gran gusto di vedérla.*

R U L E

R U L E XVII.

To, before an Infinitive, in *Italian*, is also rendered by *a* and *do*.

Ex. Let us go to walk, *andaréma a spasso.*

I have something to tell you, *hò qualche cosa da dirvi.*

It is to him to speak, *tutta à lui a parlare.*

I have Trouble to do it, *hò pena da farlo.*

R U L E XVIII.

To, before an Infinitive, is expressed by *per*, when *to* has the Meaning of *for to*, or answers to the Question *why*.

Ex. I bought Cloth (*why?* *for*) to make me a Coat, *compro del panno per farmi un giustacorpo.*

R U L E XIX.

A Participle in *ing*, coming after Verbs, is changed into the Infinitive Mood.

Ex. I hear him crying, *I intendo gridare.*

R U L E XX.

In, before a Participle in *ing*, is turned by *in*, or by *nel* with an Infinitive.

Ex. He choaked himself in eating, *si strangolo nel mangiare, or, mangiando, or, col mangiare.*

R U L E

R U L E XXI.

In, before Nouns of Number that denote a Part of Time, is expressed by *trà* or *frà*.

Ex. In three Hours, *frà tre hore*.

In ten Months, *trà dieci mesi*.

In fifteen Days, *frà quindici giorni*.

In, before Numerals that denote not the Time, is *in*.

Ex. In three Bottles, *in tre fiaschi*.

In a Garden, *in un giardino*.

R U L E XXII.

To know, when our Knowledge depends on the Senses is *conoscere*, when it arises from the Mind is *sapere*.

Ex. Is it long since you knew him? *è un pezzo che lo conoscete?*

Do you know this Dog? *conoscete questo cane?*

Do you know any News? *sapete niente di nuovo?*

Do you know to write? *sapete scrivere?*

R U L E XXIII.

In a Question, the Noun is put after the Verb as in *English*, and different from the *French Tongue*.

Ex.

Ex. Is the Gazette come? è la Gazzetta venuta?

Is the King returned? è il Re ritornato?

Note., sometimes the Noun is put before the Verb.

Ex. Are not the Sleeves too wide? le maniche non sono troppo larghe?

C H A P. V.

Of NOUNS, ADVERBS, PREPOSITIONS, &c.

R U L E I.

THE Negatives *not*, *no*, are *non*; and *nothing*, *never*, take *non* before the Verb, and *niente*, and *mai*, after the Verb: *No-body*, is *nessuno*.

Ex. I have no Money, non ho danari.

She has no Memory, non ha memoria.

She has nothing good, non ha niente di buono.

It will be nothing, non farà niente.

I never saw a worse Beast, non ho mai visto una più cattiva bestia.

R U L E II.

Not, and No, are always Neg.

Ex. Yes, or no, *si, ou non.*

No Money no Swils, *non quattrini non suizzeri.*
Not yet, *non ancora.*

R U L E III.

If the Negative *never* begins the Sentence, the Negative is put before the Verb, and the Pronoun that governs the Verb is not expressed.

Ex. Neyer did I see him, *mai non lo viddi.*

Nothing is so shameful, *niente è così vergognoso.*

R U L E IV.

Negatives in *Italian* are but rarely expressed double before the Infinitive Mood, as they are in *French*.

Ex. I pray you not to come ; in *French*, it is said,

Je vous prie de ne pas venir ; in *Italian*, *ti prego di non venire.*

R U L E V.

The Verbs to doubt not, to fear, to hinder, take the Article *non* before the following Verb, which is put in the Optative Mood.

Ex.

Ex. I doubt not but he will come, *non dubito che non venga.*

I fear he will do it, *temo che non faccia.*

R U L E VI.

In Things contrary the one to the other in Comparison, *non* is put before the Verb that follows the Particle *che*.

Ex. I understand better than I speak, *intendo meglio che non parlo.*

It is colder than it was, *fà più freddo che non faceva.*

R U L E VII.

The Particle *but* takes *non* before the Verb, and *che* after the Verb.

Ex. I have but that, *non ho che questo.*

R U L E VIII.

At, before *House*, or expressing the Dwelling one lives in, is expressed by *da*, or *in casa* with the Pronoun Possessive.

Ex. At my House, *da me*, or, *in casa mia.*

At thy House, *da te*, or, *in casa tua.*

At his, her, House, *da lui*, *da lei*, or, *in casa sua.*

At their House, *da loro M.* *da esse F.* or, *in casa loro.*

If *As* be followed by the Article *the*, or a Pronoun Possessive, *as* is expressed by *dal*, as in Chap. I. Rule 19. or by *in casa*, with the Articles of the Genitive Case.

Ex. At the Gentleman's, *dal Signor*, or, *in casa del Signor*.

At the Lady's, *dalla Signora*, or, *in casa della Signora*.

At the Scholar's, *dallo scolare*, or, *in casa dello scolare*.

At my Friend's, *dal mio amico*, or, *in casa del mio amico*.

At his Relation's, *da' suoi parenti*, or, *in casa de' suoi paernti*.

At my Sister's, *dalla sorella*, or, *in casa de' mie sorella*.

From, in the same Signification, is expressed in like manner.

Ex. From our House, *dalla casa nostra*.

R U L E IX.

As, as, being in a Sentence, are expressed by *quanto*, or *tanto* and *quanto*, or by *così* and *che*.

Ex. As well as you, *ben quanto voi*.

My Book is as handsome as yours, *il mio libro è bello quanto 'l vostro*.

Let's have our Supper as soon as possible, *fateci cenar quanto prima*.

R U L E

R U L E X.

The Particle *so* is turned by *così*.

Ex. I think so, *credo così*.

So great, *così grande*; so late, *così tardi*.

So, after the Verb *to believe*, is turned by *di sì*.

Ex. I believe so, *credo di sì*.

I believe I have, *credo di sì*.

I believe not, *credo di non*.

R U L E XI.

The Particles *a* or *an* are expressed by *uno*, which loses the letter *o* before a Noun Masculine, beginning with a Consonant: In like manner also *bello*, *quello*, *santo*, *buono*, are written *bel*, *quel*, *san*, *buon*, before Nouns Masculine; *grande* also before a Word which commences by a Consonant, or if it be of the Feminine Gender, is wrote *grain*, both Singular and Plural; if before a Vowel it is wrote *grand*.

Ex. I have a bad Game, *hò un cattivo gioco*.

Give me that Bottle and a Glass, *datemi quel flasco e un bicchiere*.

It is fine Weather, *fà bel tempo*.

Great Family, *gran famiglia*. Great Book, *gran libro*.

R U L E XII.

The Noun *Time* signifying the Weather, or the Time one lives in, is *tempo*: But when it signifies an *Occasion*, or *Opportunity*, it is *volta* F.

Ex. I pass my Time very well, *passo il tempo benissimo*.

Is it Breakfast-time? *è tempo di far colazione?*

It will be for another Time, *sara per un'altra volta*.

Note, *Time* is sometimes expressed by *via*.

Ex. Three times three are nine, *tre via tre sono nove*.

R U L E XIII.

People, being taken for the Inhabitants of a Kingdom or City, is *popolo*. If taken for some Particulars only, it is turned by *mondo*, or, *la gente*.

Ex. The People of England, *il popolo d' Inghilterra*.

There was much People, *v'era molta gente*.

R U L E XIV.

Just now, presently, are expressed by *adesso*, *adesso*.

Ex. I am going there just now, *mene vò la hora*, or, *adesso, adesso*.

I drank but just now, *ho' bevuto adesso*.

We will come presently, *adesso, adesso cen' andiamo*.

R U L E

R U L E XV.

Better, in Comparison, is *migliore*, and *than* that follows is *di*, but before Substantives, or a Pronoun Possessive *than* is rendered by the Article *del*; &c. as in Chap. I. Rule 10.

Better, also with Verbs alone is *migliò*, and *than* which follows is turned by *che*.

Ex. This is better than that, *questo è migliore di quello.*

It is better late than never, *è migliò tardi che mai.*

R U L E XVI.

Long, before the Nouns, is *longo* M. *longa* F. Sing. *longhi* M. *longhe* F. Plur. But *long* signifying a long Time is *longo tempo*, or, *un pezzo*.

Ex. This Table is too long, *questa tavola è troppo longa.*

You stay long, *state longo tempo*, or, *un pezzo.*

How long Time shall I stay? *quanto tempo mi tratterò?*

R U L E XVII.

The Particle *ago* after Parts of Time is expressed by *è* or *sono*.

Ex. How long ago, *quanto tempo è?*

How many Hours ago, *quanto hore sono?*

R U L E

R U L E XVII.

3. **Prepositions**, take *che* after them before a Verb, and without *che* requires the Verb to be put in the Infinitive Mood.

Ex. After I saw you, *dopo che vi vidi*.
After having seen you, *dopo havervi veduto*.

Exception. The Preposition before with Verbs, when signified by *want* or *invece*, or *prima*, take *che* before the Optative Mood, and *di* without *che* before the Infinitive.

Ex. Before I see you, *prima che vi veda*.
Before you speak, *prima di parlarvi*.

R U L E XIX.

The Particle *since*, signifying a Part of Time is *dopo*; *since* is also expressed by *da che*, *poi che* or *già che*.

Ex. Since your return, *dopo la vostra venuta*.
Since you was here, *da che eravate qui*.
Since it is so, *già che fia così*.

R U L E XX.

About, when with the word *Clock*, and *it is*, is expressed by *in circa* or *intorno al* &c. as in Chap. I. Rule 10. And the Verb, *it is*, is put in the third Person Plural.

Ex. It is about eight 'o Clock, *sono le otto bore in circa*.

It is about five 'o Clock, *sono intorno alle cinque bore*.

R U L E

R U L E XXI.

About, with the word *Clock*, and without the Verb *it is*, is expressed by *su'l M.* *su la F.* *su le P.* before a part of the Day.

Ex. He was here at one 'o Clock, *era qui su le un' ora.*

I saw him about ten 'o Clock, *lo viddi su le dieci ore* ; about noon, *su'l mezzo di.*

R U L E XXII.

About, signifying *Round about*, is expressed by *d'* *intorno al* &c. as in Chap. I. Rule. 19.

Ex. Run about the gardens, *correte d' intorno al giardino.*

He runs about the Chamber, *corre intorno alla camera.*

There is a crowd about her, *v' è una calca d' intorno a ella.*

R U L E XXIII.

About, signifying *near*, and before Nouns, is *appresso del* &c. as in Chap. I. Rule 10. And before Pronouns and proper Names *about* is *appresso di*.

Ex. About the fire, *appresso del fuoco.*

About, or near her, *appresso di ella.*

R U L E XXIV.

About, after the Verb *am*, and expressing the Thing we are doing, is *dietro.*

Ex. I am about it, *sono dietro.*

R U L E

R U L E XXV.

About, before a Participle in *ing* is *dietro a*, and the Participle is put in the Infinitive Mood.

Ex. I am about buying some Cloth, *sono dietro a comprare del panno.*

He is about removing, *è dietro a levare gli alloggiamenti.*

R U L E XXVI.

About, signifying *concerning*, is expressed by *di*, or *del* as in Chap. I. Rule 10.

Ex. I speak about your business, *parlo del vostro negozi.*

They speak about you, *si parla di voi.*

They talked about affairs of State, *si parlava degli affari di Stato.*

About, signifying *upon*, is *sopra*.

Ex. I have no money about me, *non ho danaro sopra me.*

About, signifying *towards*, is *verso*.

Ex. He lives about the Tower, *sta di casa verso la Torre.*

About, signifying *near* or in the neighbourhood, is *vicino al &c* as in Chap. I. Rule 19.

Ex. It is near the Strand, *è vicino alla Strand.*

About;

About, is expressed by *in circa*, and the Verb put in the third Person.

Ex. It is about two Years, *sono due anni in circa*.

About, before Nouns of Number is also expressed by *da*.

Ex. A man about fifty Years old, *un uomo all' età di circa cinquanta anni*.

Whereabout, is *dove*, whereabout is it? *dove è?*

Thereabout, is *poco appresso*; a hundred pounds, or thereabout, *cento lire o poca appresso*.

R U L E XXVII.

About, signifying *to*, is *da*; but before Nouns and Pronouns is *al &c.* as in Chap. I. Rule 19.

About, signifying *thereabout*, or the neighbouring Country, is expressed by *i*, *de'*, *a'i contorni*.

Ex. Go about your busness, *andate a' negozi vostrî*.

I saw York, and thiereabout, *i. e.* the neighbouring Country, *viddi York, ed i contorni*.

From the Country, and thereabout, *della or, dalla campagna, e da' or, dei contorni*.

R U L E XXVIII.

The Prepositions *in*, or *into*, are turned by *in*, after Verbs of Motion, or Rest; Also after the definite or Tenses past *in* is *in*: After the Future Tense *in* is expressed by *fra*. [before Numbers and Parts of Time.] *Within* is also expressed by *fra* in: his last sense, otherwise *within* is expressed by *in* also.

Ex.

Ex. He is in Italy, *è in Italia.*

He waits for you in your chamber, *P aspetta
in camera.*

She goes into Spain, *ella va in Spagna.*

They say he will go to [into] Flanders, *si dice
ch' andrà in Fiandra.*

He went in teh days into Germany, *andò in dieci
giorni in Germania.*

She will return in fifteen Months, *ritornerà
frà quindici mesi.*

R U L E XXIX.

The *Italians* make use of the Future Tense after the Particle *se if*, when an Action that is to happen or come to pass, is intended, otherwise *se if* governs indifferently the Indicative or the Optative Mood; but the Imperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood is always changed to the second Imperfect of the Optative in this sense, *i. e.* If we speak of the Time past, the Verb is put in the Imperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood; if, of the Time to come, the second Imperfect of the Optative Mood is used.

Ex. If you come to morrow, *se verrete domani.*

If he comes we shall see him, *se verrà lo vedremo.*

If you say true, *se dite vero.*

If I had Money they have robbed me of it, *se
avevo danari mi sono stati rubbati.*

If I had money I would lend none, *se haveffi
danari non ne presterei.*

R U L E XXX.

Good, being an Adjective, is *buono* M. *buona* F. but *good* taken Substantively is *bene*.

Ex.

Ex. That is good, *ciò è buono.*

It is for your good, *è pe' l vostro bene.*

This Rain does much good, *questa pioggia fa del bene.*

R U L E XXXL

The Particle *very* is expressed by *bene*, or by *molto*: Also *very much* is turned by *gran* or *grande*.

Ex. I am very sorry, *mi dispiace molto.*

He has very much Spirit, *ha grande spirito.*

Very, before an Adjective, is turned by *mo^ro*, and the Adjective put in the Superlative degree.

Ex. It is very fine, *è bellissimo.*

R U L E XXXII.

The Word *Clock*, in *Italian* as well as in *French*, is expressed by *Hour*, but in *Italian* the Verb is put in the same Number as *Hour*, and takes the Article *le* before the Number.

Ex. It is half an hour past five 'o Clock, *sono le cinque bore e mezza.*

An hour and three quarters, *un' hora e tre quadranti.*

R U L E XXXIII.

This Day Sen'night, this day fort'night &c. are turned by *from to day in eight &c.* and the Article is put before the Number.

K

Ex.

Ex. We will come this day Sen'night, *andiamo d'*
hoggî à gli otto.
 Tuesday forthnight, *di martedî à li quindici.*

R U L E XXXIV.

A great deal is expressed by *molto*, and sometimes by *grande*.

I think she has a great deal of Wit, *creda c'*
abbia molto spirito.

I have had a great deal of pain, *bò havuto gran*
paura.

A great deal of pleasure, *gran piacere.*

He has a great deal of Spirit, *bà grande*, or
molto spirito.

A little of is expressed by *un poco di*.

Ex. A little bread, *un poco di pane.*

A little of Compassion, *un poco di pietà.*

R U L E XXXV.

When the Word *qual* what, not in a Question comes before a Verb, the Verb is put in the Optative Mood.

Ex. I know not what is his Intention, *non jà qual sia*
l'intento suo.

R U L E XXXVI.

Here, is turned by *qui* with Verbs of Rest, or when near at hand ; by *quà* with Verbs of Motion, or when at more distance.

Ex. He is here, *è qui* ; come here, or hither *venete*
quà.

R U L E

R U L E XXXVII.

Infinitives, Gerunds, and the Adverb *eccò* there, always take the Articles *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, after them, and the Infinitive Mood loses its last vowel.

Ex. To see him, *per vederlo*, not *per lo vedere*.

I shall be very glad to know him, *mi sarebbe
caro di conoscerlo*.

Seeing her, *vedendola*.

There they are, *eccoli*.

R U L E XXXVIII.

To go, when it means to see a Person, is expressed by *venire* and not *andare*.

Ex. I will go to your House too morrow, *verrò da
voi domani*.

Note, when *to go* is expressed by *andare* and an Infinitive follows, the Prepositions *a* or *ad* must be put before the Infinitive; the same also before other Verbs of Motion.

Ex. Let us go see, *andiamo a vedere*.

Come see, *venite a vedere*.

Let us send to tell, *mandiamo a dire*.

R U L E XXXIX.

The Infinitive Mood of Verbs is used when we forbid a Person to do a thing.

Ex. Do not thou do that, *non fare questo*.

Say thou nothing, *non dire niente*.

K *Keep* *the* *old* *rule*.

Keep

R U L E XL.

In my, in thy, in his, in her, are expressed by *nel* as in Chap. I. Rule 7.

Ex. In my garden, *nel mio giardino.*

In thy book, *nel tuo libro.*

In her Chamber, *nella sua camera.*

In his Chambers, *nelle sue camere.*

R U L E XLI.

All or *every* are expressed by *tutto* M. *tutta* F. Sing. *tutti* M. *tutte* F. Plur. And also by *ogni*, which is only used in the Singular Number both Masc. and Feminine, and is joined to the following Word, beginning either with a Vowel or Consonant.

Ex. The whole Earth, *tutta la terre.*

All the Women, *tutte le donne.*

All or every Scholar, *ogni scolare.*

For every thing, *per ognicosa.*

R U L E XLII.

More, or more of, are expressed by *maggior* when *more* can be turned by *greater*.

Ex. With more boldness, *con maggior ardore.*

We must have more courage, *bisogna battere maggior anima.*

More, when it signifies a greater Number, is *maggior numero di.*

Ex. We must have more Soldiers, *bisogna battere maggior numero di soldati.*

More

More than, with a word of Time, is *più* at the end of the Phrase.

Ex. It is more than ten Years, *sono dieci anni e più*.
More than an hour, *un' ora e più*.

R U L E XLIII.

So that, or *in that manner* is expressed by *che*.

Ex. I will do it so that you shall be contented, *farò che farete contento*.

R U L E XLIV.

Much, in Comparison, is often expressed by *molto*.

Ex. Much more learned, *più dotto*.

R U L E XLV.

Like, is expressed sometimes by *da*; *upon the faith* is expressed also by *da*.

Ex. You speak like a friend, *V. S. parla da amico*.

Upon the faith of an honest man, *da galant' uomo*.

R U L E XLVI.

The Words *long of*, *as far as*, are rendered by *per*.

Ex. It is not long of me, *non resta per me*.

As far as I see, *per quel che vedo*.

R U L E XLVII.

To be sick, or *ill*, before Part of the Body, is expressed by *dolere*, which is made then a Verb Impersonal, and put only in the third Person singular.

Ex. I have the head ach, mi duole la testa.

They have the head ach, duole loro la testa.

R U L E XLVIII.

*After that, before the Verb *am* and a Participle Common, is *che* after the Participle, which is put at the beginning.*

Ex. After that he had seen, veduto c'ebbe.

*Am, and its Tenses, before an Infinitive Mood is expressed by *dovere*, or, by *essere per*.*

Ex. I was to go, dovevo andare, or ero per andare.

R U L E XLIX.

Being, before a Participle Common, is not express.

Ex. The time being come, venuto il tempo.

Being astonisht at it, meravigliatosene.

R U L E L.

*To bring, when it means a thing we cannot carry, is *menare*, a thing we can carry, is *portare*.*

Ex. Bring the Horse to the Stable, menate il cavallo alla stala.

Bring me some Beer, portatemi della biera.

R U L E LI.

*Do, does, are not express in Italian unless they be turned by the Verb *to make*; And when used to enquire after Health, *do &c.* is turned by the Verb *stare*. See the Examples Chap. 3. Rule 4.*

Ex.

Ex. What do you want? *che cerca V. S.?*

How do you do? *come stà V. S.*

How does your Brother, *come stà il suo fratello;*

R U L E LII.

From, before a Participle ending in *ing*, is turned by *da*, and the Participle put in the Infinitive Mood.

Ex. He hinders me from studying, *m' impedisce da studiare.*

From whom, from which are expressed by *da chi.*

Ex. The Man from whom I know it, *Il buomo da chi lo so.*

R U L E LIII.

Having, before the Participle Common, is not expressed in *Italian.*

Ex. Having done it, *fatto lo.*

Having seen him, *veduto lo.*

R U L E LIV.

Than, with Nouns or Pronouns alone in Comparison, is *di*, as is before mentioned Rule 15. but with Verbs Adjective, or an Adverb, or between two Substantives, *than* is expressed by *che*, which sometimes takes *non* before the Verb that follows; see Rule 6.

Ex. More learned than Cicero, *più dotto di Cicerone.*

The Professor is more eloquent than me, *il Professore è più eloquente di me.*

More

More poor than rich, *più povero che ricco.*
 He writes more than he speaks, *scrive più che
 non parla.*

Virgil pleases me more than Ovid, *Virgilio mi
 piace più che Ovidio.*

R U L E LV.
 Than, after a Comparative, and followed by an Article, or Pronoun Possessive, as, *than the, than
 this, than his, than their &c.* is expressed by the Article *de* as in Chap. I. Rule. 10.

Ex. More white than the snow, *più bianco della neve.*

More contented than the King, *più contento
 del Re.*

Less rich than my neighbour, *meno ricco del
 mio vicino.*

Bigger than my hand, *più larga della mia mano.*

Note. If the Pronoun Possessive be in the Plural Number, the Articles *de* and *delle* are used for *than.*

Ex. He is handsomer than his sisters, *egli è più bello
 delle sue sorelle.*

More powerful than my brothers, *più potenti
 de miei fratelli;* than their Highnesses, *delle
 Altezze loro.*

R U L E LVI.

How Old, is expressed by Years, and the Verb are by the Verb *have*.

Ex. How old are you? *quanti anni hai?*

R U L E

R U L E LVII.

There, before Verbs is not express, and the Verb agrees with the Noun following.

Ex. There came many Lords, *vennero molti Signori.*

R U L E LVIII.

Will turned by *shall*, is the mark of the Future Tense, otherwise it is a Verb?

Ex. Will you come with me, *vorrete venire meco.*

R U L E LIX.

The Adverbs *till*, *untill*, may be expressed by *che quando*.

Ex. We know not what health is till we are sick, *non si sa cosa sia sanità che quando si sta ammalato.*

R U L E LX.

How, and *uboi*, before a Note of Admiration is expressed by *O*.

Ex. How happy should I be if I understood it, ! *O me felice se la sapessi !*

What white hands she has ! *O che belle mani ha !*

How, is also expressed by *quanto*,

Ex How weary am I of laying in bed ! *quanto mi rincresce lo stare in letto !*

R U L E LXI.

To Que, meaning the place of our Residence, is expressed by the Verb *stare*

Ex.

Ex. Where does he live, *ove* *sta* *di* *casa*?
 He lives hard by, *sta* *qui* *vicino*.

R U L E L X H.

The Particle *something*, between two Verbs is not expressed.

Ex. Give me something to drink, *dàtemi* *a bere*.

R U L E L X H I I.

All over, is expressed by *per tutto*.

Ex. I have pains all over my body, *sento* *malori* *per tutta* *la vita*.

R U L E L X I V.

The Verb *must* is expressed by *bisognare* to be hoove, and the Verb following is put in the Infinitive Mood.

Ex. You must take courage, *bisogna* *fare* *stanco*.
 You must not fear, *non bisogna* *temere*.

Necessary Remarks

I. The *Italians* in discourse, and in their Writings often make use of Particles, tho' they at the same time have no real signification, but are judged necessary to give more strength and elegance to the Phrase; the more common are *di*, *mi*, *ne*, *se*, *si*, *ti*, *per*, *già*, *ancor*, *ben*, *què* &c. and of which take the following Examples,

E. g. To run after the Hare, *correr di dietro alla lepre*, I know what I say, *so quello che mi dite*.

They remain quiet after supper, *dopo cena fanno* *strettezze*.

Let us go and live in an other Country, *andiamo a stare in un altro paese*.

He believes he has gained, *si è creduto d' aver* *vinto*.

I thought to have found you awake, and you slept, *mi ero creduto trovarti svegliato, e ti* *dormivi*.

The business goes *so*, *la cosa andrà per scontato*.

At present they are disposed to come, *trascorso* *pur già disposti a venire*.

What did you do after supper? *che si fece* *qui dopo cena?*

The Poets especially take great liberty in adding or retrenching Words at pleasure; as *legáro* for *legárono*, *amáro* for *amárono*, *de lo* for *dello*, *ne la* for *nella*, which will be found by practice and reading the best Authors, who frequently write

vò for *voglio* I am willing.

potea for *poteva* he was able.

opre

opre for *opere* work
prince for *principe* prince.
lettre for *lettere* letters.
fue for *fu* he was.
nui for *noi* us.

And the like will occur in many Instances: And indeed so frequent are the liberties taking by the Italian Poets that they may in some measure be said to have formed a language peculiar to themselves.

II. The Particles *ci* and *vi*, are Personal Pronouns when they signify *us* and *you*; When they signify *here*, *there*, *thither*, *at it* &c. as before mentioned in the *Table of Pronouns*, they are Adverbs of Place, and it would be proper to distinguish the different sense of these Words by marking them when Adverbs, *ci*, *vi*, but this is not in general observed by Authors.

Né, also in like manner when accented is an Adverb.

Sì, also accented is an Adverb.

III. Adverbs are never put between the Pronoun and the Verb, but at the end of the sentence, as, *I most humbly thank you, vi*, or *la ringratio bumbilmente.*

COMPOSITIONS;

OR,

LESSONS

ON THE

Foregoing RULES.

* * * Observe in making your Compositions, that the Figures placed over the Words in the following Lessons, refer to the Figures placed at the bottom of each Lesson, which direct the Learner to the several RULES of the foregoing CHAPTERS, wherein the Peculiarities of the Italian Tongue are explained, and made familiar ; the rest will be found in the Dictionary.

Let the Learner write out the English of these Compositions, with the References to the Rules, where noted ; And having turned the English into Italian, according to the Directions he will here meet with, and the common Rules of Grammar, let him examine his Composition by the Italian : By this Practice, he will soon be acquainted with the Rules of this Grammar, and enabled to point out himself, those Words that require a particular Direction ; And for this Purpose, some Lessons are here also given without any Reference ; and the like he may continue (if necessary) to write from any easy Author in Italian and English.

After the Lessons are perfected, the Learner should get them by Heart, and take every Opportunity to discourse.

* * * In Italian, it is not necessary to make use of the Pronouns Nominative to Verbs.

L

COMPOSITION. I.

GOOD morrow, Sir.

G ^{1 2 1} How do you do this morning.

I do very well ³ to serve ⁴ you.

I am glad ^{5 6} to see ⁴ you.

And ^{7 8} I also you.

I am ⁹ your Servant.

I most humbly thank ¹⁰ you.

What news ¹² have ⁴ you?

I have none, ¹³ ¹³ [of it.]

What do they say in town?

They say ^{14 15} nothing.

Will you drink ¹⁶ a glass ¹⁷ of wine?

No, I thank ¹⁸ you.

I do not drink ¹⁹ in ²⁰ the morning.

1. *do*, C. 5. R. 51.

6. *to*, C. 4. R. 16.

2. *you*, C. 3. R. 1. note

7. *I*, C. 3. R. 3.

3. *to*, C. 4. R. 1.

8. *you*, C. 2. R. 3.

4. *you*, C. 2. R. 3. C. 3. R. 2.

9. *your*, C. 2. R. 1.

5. *am glad*, C. 4. R. 1.

COMPOSITION I.

BUON dì, or giorno Signore.

Come state, or stà Vosignoria, mane.

Stò benissimo per servirvi, or servirla.

Mi rallegro di vedervi, or vederla.

Ed Io anche vi, or la.

Sono il vostro, or il suo servo.

Vi, or la ringrázio humilmense.

Che nuove havéte, or hà V. S?

Non ne hd.

Che si dice in citta?

Non si dice niente.

Volete, or vuela V. S. bere un bicchiere di vino?

Non, vi, or la ringrázio.

Non bevo la mattina.

10. <i>you</i> , C. 2. R. 3. C. 3. R. 1.	15. <i>nothing</i> , C. 5. R. 1.
11. <i>humbly</i> , Page 110.	16. <i>will</i> , C. 5. R. 58.
12. <i>what</i> , C. 3. R. 7.	17. <i>a</i> , C. 5. R. 11.
13. <i>none</i> , &c. C. 3. R. 4. 14.	18. <i>no</i> , C. 5. R. 2.
14. <i>the</i> , C. 3. R. 13.	19. <i>not</i> , C. 5. R. 1.
	20. <i>in the</i> , C. 1. R. 7.

COMPOSITION II.

D¹ O ² you love beer? ³
D¹ I love wine better ³ ⁴ than beer. ³

H⁵ ⁶ Have you any beer in Italy?

We have ⁷ more wine than beer.

Where do they sell Wine? ¹ ⁸ ³

They sell it at the Taverns. ⁸ ^{8*} ⁹

If I go to Italy should I find there good beer? ¹⁰ ¹¹ ¹²

You would find bad beer, but the best wine in the ¹² ¹³
¹⁴ ¹⁵ ¹⁶ [world. I thank you for your good advice.

An I thank you with all my heart for your ¹⁴ ¹⁷ ¹⁶ ¹⁵
 [demand, or question.

1. *do.* C. 5. R. 51.

2. *you,* C. 2. R. 3.
 C. 3. R. 1. note.

3. *beer,* &c. C. 1. R. 2.

4. *better,* C. 5. R. 15.

5. *have you,* C. 3. R. 3.

6. *any,* C. 1. R. 10.

7. *more,* page 24.

8. *they,* C. 3. R. 13.

8* *it,* Table of Articles,

and C. 3. R. 4.

9. *at the,* C. 1. R. 19.

10. *to,* C. 1. R. 21.

11. *there,* p. 110, &c.
 12. *good, bad,* C. 1. R.

16.

13. *in the,* C. 1. R. 12.

14. *you,* C. 2. R. 3. C. 3.
 R. 1.

15. *for,* C. 1. R. 10.

16. *your, my,* C. 2.

R. 1.

17. *with,* C. 1. R. 11.

COM-

COMPOSITION II.

A MATE, or amà V. S. la biera?

Amo il vino meglio che la biera.

Havete della biera in Italia?

Habbiamo più di vino che di biera.

Dove si vende il vino?

Si lo vende alle taverne.

Sè andavo in Italia, vi trovereiio di buona biera.

Troverete, or trovera V. S. di cattiva biera, mà il
meglior vino del mondo.

Vi, or la ringrázio del suo, or vostra buon avviso.

E la ringrázio di tutto 'l mio cuore della sua, or
[vostra domanda.]



COMPOSITION III.

^{1 2 3 4}
DO you know that Gentleman?

⁵
What Gentleman?

^{6 7 8}
He who was with me here.

^{9 10 3 11}
No, I do not know him

¹¹
You have seen him many times.

^{10 13 11}
For all that, I do not know him.

^{12 1 2 11}
What does he ask you?

^{11 12*}
He asks me some money.

^{13 14 15}
If you have any lend it to him.

^{16 15}
If I fear to lose it.

^{13 16 15 15}
If you fear to lose it, do not lend it to him.

^{17 18 19 11}
He says that his Father will pay me.

1. do, does, C. 5. R. 51. 8. here, C. 5. R. 36.

2. you, he, C. 3. R. 3. 9. no, C. 5. R. 2.

3. know, C. 4. R. 22. 10. not, C. 5. R. 1.

4. that, C. 3. R. 8. 11. him, you, me, C. 2.

5. what, C. 3. R. 7. R. 3. C. 3. R. 1.

6. he who, C. 3. R. 12. 12. what, C. 3. R. 7.

7. with me, C. 1. R. 11. 12* some, C. 1. R. 10.

Is

COMPOSITION III.

COnoscete, or conosce V. S. quel gentiluomo?
Che gentiluomo?

Egli che era qui meco.

Non, non lo conosco.

L' havete veduto spesse volte.

Per tutta ciò non lo conosco.

Che vi, or le domanda?

Mi domanda quattrini.

Se ne havete prestate glieli.

Temo perderli.

Se temete perderli, non glieli prestate.

Dice che 'l suo padre mi pagherà.

13. if, C. 5. R. 29. it. C. 3. R. 4.

14. any, C. 3. R. 14. 16. to lose, C. 5. R. 37.

15. it to him, C. 2. 17. that, C. 3. R. 8.

R. 3. C. 3. R. 2. also 18. his, C. 2. R. 1.
page 78. note. 19. will, C. 5. R. 58.

18 20 21
Is his Father in town?

3 10
I know not.

13 22 19 11 13 19
If he be there, I will ask him if he will pay
11 24
me the money which I shall lend.

20. *father*, C. 4. R. 23. 23. *me*, C. 2. R. 3. C. 3.
21. *in*, C. 5. R. 28. R. 2.
22. *there*, page 110. *note*. 24. *which*, C. 3. R. 7.

C O M P O S I T I O N IV.

I ¹ Went yesterday to a gentleman's, and I
3 4 5
wondered to hear that he was gone out,
6
[or] from home

7 8 9
What a Clock was it?

9 10 8
It was about seven a clock.

11 12 13
It is not a wonder, because he ^{is} a man of
3 14
business, and rises betimes in the morning.

1. <i>went</i> , C. 4. R. 14.	5. <i>that</i> , C. 3. R. 8.
2. <i>to</i> , C. 5. R. 8.	6. <i>from</i> , C. 5. R. 8.
3. <i>wondered</i> , <i>rises</i> C. 4. R. 1.	7. <i>what</i> , C. 3. R. 7.
4. <i>to</i> , C. 4. R. 16.	8. <i>clock</i> , C. 5. R. 32. How

È il suo padre in città?

Non so,

*Se c' sia, gli domandero se vuol pagarmi i quattrini
che prefero.*

COMPOSITION IV.

Andai ieri da un gentiluomo, e mi marea-
vigliai di sentire ch' era uscito di casa.

Che hora era? 11. about, C. 4. R. 4.
Erano intorno alle sette, 12. not, C. 3. R. 4.
Non è maraviglia, perché è uomo d'affari, e se
leva da buon' hora la mattina.

gi. was it, C. 4. R. 4. 13. be is a, C. 4. R. 5.
10. about, C. 5. R. 20. 14. in the, C. 5. R. 2.

Come

15 14 16
How can he do it in the winter? when it is
3 17 18 [cold.
He warms himself by [with] walking.

19 20 21
Sit down if you please.

3 22
Come near the fire.

23 12
I am not cold.

24 25 26 27 28
Will you drink something to cool yourself?

When I am ²³ hot I am ²³ hungry, and when I am ²³
cold I am ²³ dry.

15 12
I cannot stay.

I must go.

29 30 5
I am to go to see a lady, who [*that*] is going
[*goes*] to-morrow into the country.

15. <i>can</i> , C. 4. R. 11.	25. <i>you</i> , C. 3. R. 3.
16. <i>it is</i> , C. 4. R. 7.	26. <i>something</i> , C. 5. R. 62.
17. <i>by</i> , C. 1. R. 11.	27. <i>to</i> , C. 4. R. 18.
18. <i>walking</i> , C. 4. R. 19	28. <i>yourself</i> , C. 2. R. 6.
19. <i>sit down</i> , pag. 67. <i>note</i> .	C. 3. R. 2.
20. <i>if</i> , C. 5. R. 29.	29. <i>am</i> , C. 5. R. 48.
21. <i>you</i> , C. 3. R. 1.	30. <i>to go</i> , C. 5. R. 38.
22. <i>near</i> , C. 5. R. 23.	31. <i>into the</i> , C. 1. R. 20.
23. <i>am</i> , C. 4. R. 8.	
24. <i>will</i> , C. 5. R. 58.	

C O M-

Come puo far egli l'inverno? quando fa freddo.

Si scalda co'l caminare.

Seda V. S. se le piace.

Si metta appreso del fuoco.

Non bò freddo.

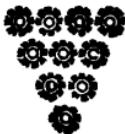
Volete bere per rinfrescarvi?

Quando bò caldo bò fame, e quando bò freddo bò sete.

Non posso stare.

Bisogna che vada.

*Devo andare a vedere una donna, che va domani
alla campagna.*



COMPOSITION. V.

WHO ¹ is here?

Give ² ³ me my ~~shirt~~.

There ⁴ it is, Sir.

Bring ² ³ me my stockings.

Comb ² my head [~~hair~~].

Take ⁵ an other Comb.

Give ² ³ me my handkercheif.

Here ⁵ is a clean one, Sir.

Bring ³ my breeches.

What ⁶ ⁷ ⁸ suit will you wear to day?

That ⁹ [*which*] ¹⁰ I wore yesterday.

Be quick, make a fire, dress ² me.

1. *here*, C. 5. R. 36.

2. *me*, C. 3. R. 2.

3. *my*, C. 2. R. 1.

4. *there*, C. 5. R. 37.

5. *an*, C. 5. R. 11.

6. *what*, C. 3. R. 7,

7. *will*, C. 5. R. 58.

8. *you*, Page, 67. *note*.

9. *that*, C. 3. R. 7.

10. *wore*, C. 4. R. 14.

There

COMPOSITION V.

CHI è quì?

Dátemi la mia camicia.

Eccola, signore.

Portátemi le mie calzette.

Pettinátemi.

Pigliáte un' altro pétine.

Dátemi il mio fazzoletto.

Eccone un bianco, signore.

Portáte i miei calzoni.

Che vestito metterà V. S. oggi.

Quel che portávo iéri.

Sù sù, presto, fate fuoco, vestítemi.



There is a fire.

11 8

What will you please to have, Sir, or what will you, Sir?

12 Some body knocks, see who it is.

13 Where are my slippers?

14 'T is, [or you have] well done.

11. *what*, C. 3. R. 7. 13. *are*, C. 4. R. 23.
12. *some body*, C. 3. R. 13. 14. *well*, pag. 110. note 3.

C O M P O S I T I O N VI.

Bring us ¹ ² ^{2*} ³ something to breakfast.

Lay ⁴ a Napkin on that Table.

Give ² us plates, knives and forks.

Rinse the glasses.

Give the gentleman ⁴ a Chair.

1. *bring*, C. 5. R. 50. 2* *something*, C. 5. R. 62.

2. *us*, me, C. 2. R. 3. 3. *to*, C. 4. R. 17.
C. 3. R. 2. 4. *a*, C. 5. R. 11.

C'è fuoco, signore.

Che commanda V. S.?

Si picchia, vedete chi è.

Ove sono le mie pianelle.

Avete fatto bene.

C O M P O S I T I O N VI.

Portateci da far colazione.

Mettete una salutéttina sopra questa tavola.

Dáteci tondi, coltelli forchette.

Sciaguáste i bicchieri.

Date una sedia al signore.

Sit down, Sir ; sit by ⁵ [near] the fire.

I am not cold, I am very well here. ⁶ ⁷ ⁸ ⁹

Let's see if the wine be good. ¹⁰

Give me that bottle, and a glass. ² ¹¹ ⁴

Pray taste that wine ? ¹¹

How do you like it ? or does it please him ? ¹²

What do you say to it ? ¹³

'Tis not bad, 'tis very good. ¹⁴ ⁷ ¹⁴ ¹⁵

Sir, your Health.

Sir, I thank you.

Give the gentleman something to drink. ¹⁶ ¹⁷

I have drank but just now. ¹⁸

5. *near*, C. 5. R. 26.

6. *am*, C. 4. R. 8.

7. *not*, C. 3. R. 2.

8. *very*, C. 5. R. 31.

9. *bere*, C. 5. R. 36.

10. *is*, C. 5. R. 29.

11. *that*, C. 3. R. 8.

12. *it him*, C. 2. R. 3. 8.

Page, 78.

13. *to it*, C. 3. R. 14.

14. *'tis*, C. 4. R. 4.

15. *very*, C. 5. R. 31.

16. *something*, C. 5. R. 62.

17. *to*, C. 4. R. 17.

18. *just now*, C. 5. R. 14.

V. S. seda; si metta vicino al fuoco.

Non bò freddo, sono benissimo qui.

Vediámo se 'l vino è buono.

Dátemi quel fiasco, e un bicchiere.

De grazia, V. S. provi questo vino.

Che gliene pare?

Che ne dice?

Non è cattivo, è squisitissimo.

Alla sanità di V. S. Brindisi a V. S.

Ringrázio V. S.

Date a bere al Signóre.

Hò bevuto adéssò.



COMPOSITION VII.

D¹ ² O you speak Italian ?

I speak it ³ a little.

How do ¹ ² you call ⁴ this in Italian.

It is called, *or* they call it.

Do you learn to speak Italian ?

Yes, Sir.

How do they call ⁵ your master, *or* what is ⁷ your master's name.

He calls himself, *or* his name is ***.

How long have you learned ?

I have learnt a month, six months, nine months,
a year.

You speak well.

Never fear, the Italian language is not hard.

1. <i>do, does</i> , C. 5. R. 51.	7. <i>your</i> , C. 2. R. 1.
2. <i>you</i> , C. 3. R. 1. <i>note.</i>	8. <i>himself</i> , C. 2. R. 6.
3. <i>it</i> , C. 3. R. 14. 1.	C. 3. R. 1.
4. <i>this</i> , C. 3. R. 8.	9. <i>how long</i> , C. 5. R. 16.
5. <i>It is, they</i> , C. 3. R. 13.	10. <i>a</i> , C. 5. R. 11.
6. <i>to</i> , C. 4. R. 17.	Do

COMPOSITION VII.

Parla V. S. Italiano?

Io lo parlo un poco.

Come chiama V. S. questo in Italiano?

Si chiama.

Impara V. S. a parlar Italiano.

Si Signore.

Come si chiama il suo maestro.

*Si chiama il Signor ***.*

Quanto tempo ha V. S. imparato?

Ho imparato un mese, sei mesi, nove mesi.

V. S. parla bene.

Non temo V. S. la lingua Italiana non è difficile.

Impara

[130]

1 2 11
Do you learn every day?

12 13 14
No Sir, I learn but three times a week.

15 1 7 16
On what days does your master come?

17 17 17
Monday, wednesday, friday?

15 18
At what 'o clock?

18
At ten o' clock.

11. *every*, C. 5. R. 41.

12. *but*, C. 5. R. 7.

13. *times*, C. 5. R. 12.

14. *a*, C. 1. R. 6.

15. *what*, C. 3. R. 7.

16. *master*, C. 4. R. 23.

17. *monday, &c.* C. 1.

R. 1.

18. *clock*, C. 5 R. 32.

COMPOSITION VIII.

A 1
T what game shall we play?

Let us make a party at picquet.

What [how much] 2 will you play for?

Let's see who shall deal, or to whom it shall happen to deal.

1. *what*, C. 3. R. 7. 2. *will*, C. 5. R. 58.

You

Impara V. S. ogni giorno?

Signorino, non imparo che tre volte la settimana.

In che giorno viene il suo maestro?

Il lunedì, il mercoledì, ed il venerdì.

A che ora?

Alle dieci ore.

C O M P O S I T I O N . V I I I .

A *Che gioco faremo noi?*

Faciamo una partita a pietrasoli.

Quanto voléte giocarci?

Vediamo a chi toccherà a farci.

You are to deal. I am to deal.

Shuffle the Cards.

They are shuffled enough.

Cut, Sir.

I have a bad hand, *or* game.

Deal again if you please.

No, Sir, not this Time.

Have you all ⁷ your Cards?

I believe ⁸ I have.

How many do you take [*of them?*]

I take ¹⁰ all, I leave one [*of them?*]

Have you laid out?

Tell your point, fifty, sixty.

I have three Aces, three Kings, three Queens, and
three Knaves.

3. *Shuffled*, C. 3. R. 6.

4. *a*, C. 5. R. 11.

5. *if*, C. 5. R. 29.

6. *you*, C. 3. R. 1.

7. *your*, C. 2. R. 1.

8. *I have*, C. 5. R. 10.

9. *of them*, C. 3. R. 14. 1.

10. *all*, C. 5. R. 41.

I have

Tocc' a voi. tocc'a me.

Mescoláte le carte.

Sono mescoláte a bastanza.

Alzáte, Signore.

Hò un cattivo giuoco.

A monte se le piace.

Signornò, per questa volta.

Avéte le vostre carte?

Credo di sì.

Quanto ne pigliate?

Piglio tutto, ne lásco una.

Avéte scartato?

Contáte il vostro punto, cinquanta, sessanta.

Hò tre asse, tre re, tre dame, e tre fanti.

I have as much, [⁹ *of them.*]

I have not as much.

I have lost, you have made a peek, a repeek.

You have won.

We are quits, or even.

¹² ⁴ I owe you a Game.

11. *not*, C. 3. R. 1. 12. *you* C. 2. R. 3. C. 3.
R. 1.

COMPOSITION XI.

W ^I Here is my Servant.

He is below.

Ask him if he has been for my ³ ^I letters.

I believe not.

Tell him to go [*that he go*] directly.

There are no letters for you.

1. *my*, C. 2. R. 1.

2. *him, me*, C. 2. R. 3.
C. 3. R. 2.

3. *been*, C. 3. R. 6.

4. *believe*, C. 5. R. 10.

5. *there*, see page 110. &c.
6. *you*, C. 2. R. 6.

Gave

Ne bò altretante.

Non ne bò altretante.

Hò persò, avéte fatto un pico, repico.

Avéte vinto, or guadagnato.

Siámo pari.

Vi devo una partita.

C O M P O S I T I O N I X.

D *Ou' è 'l mio servo?*
E a basso.

Domandategli s' è andato per le mie lettere.

Credo di non.

Ditegli che vada adesso.

Non c' sono lettere per voi.

N

Dátemi

2 7 7 8
Gave me a sheet of paper, a pen, and a little Ink.

5 9
There are no pens.

They are good for nothing.

10 11
There are some others.

They are not made.

12
Where is your penknife?

13 14
Can you [do you know to] make pens?

15
I make them my own way.

16 17
Will you read the gazette?

15 15
I shall be glad of it, if you have it.

2 18 2 20
Oblige me to let me see it.

5 8
There is nothing [of] new.

21
Who sends it you?

One of my friends,

7. a, C. 5. R. 11.	14. pens, C. 1. R. 1.
8. a little, C. 5. R. 34.	15. them, it, C. 3. R. 1.
9. no, nothing, C. 5. R. 1.	16. will, C. 5. R. 58.
10. there, C. 5 R. 37.	17. you, C. 3. R. 3.
11. some. C. 3. R. 14.	18. to, C. 4. R. 16.
12. your, C. 2. R. 1.	19. me, C. 3. R. 2.
13. can, i. e. know C. 4. R. 22.	20. it, C. 3. R. 4.
	21. it you, see pag. 29.

Dátemi un fóglío di carta, una penna et un poco d'
Inchióstro.

Non vi sono penne.

Non sono buone, or non vágliono niente.

Eccone altre.

Non sono temperate.

Ou' è 'l vostro temperino?

Sapete temperar 'le penne?

Le temporo a modo mio.

Volate legger la gazzetta.

L'overei caro, se l'aveste.

Favoritemi di farmela vedere.

Non ci è niente di nuovo.

Che vela manda?

E un' amico mio.



I would have one [*of them*] also.

I will ask it for you.

You will oblige me much.

I will write to him too morrow Evening.

Do not [*you*] forget it.

I will remember it, *or* I will remember me of it.

22. *of them*, C. 3. 24. *you*, C. 2. R. 5.
R. 14. &c. 25. *me, to him*, C. 3. R. 1.
23. *will*, C. 5. R. 58. 26. *you it, me of it*, see
pag. 28. 29.

COMPOSITION X.

W ¹hen will you ²come to me?
To morrow ³very early.

How have you passed the night?

Very badly, I have not slept.

I have had a [*the*] fever all night?

I have [*feel*] pains ⁴all over my body.

1. *will*, C. 5. R. 58. 3. *very*, C. 5. R. 31.
2. *you*, C. 2. R. 2. 4. *all*, C. 5. R. 41.
R. 3. C. 3. You

Ne vorrei aver un' ancor' jo.

La chiederò per voi.

M' obbligerete affai.

Gli scriverò domani sera.

Non vene scordate.

Mene ricorderò.

COMPOSITION X.

Quando mi verréte a trováre.

Domani a buonissim' ora.

Come havéte passato la notte?

Malaménte, non hò dormito.

Hò avuto la febbre per tutta la notte.

Sento dolori per tutta la vita.

5 6 You must be let blood.

I have been blooded twice [*two times.*].

I am sorry for ⁷ it, or ⁷ it grieves ⁷ me.

Take care of yourself?

Who is able to bear it?

I wonder the doctor is not come.

6

You must take courage, 'twill be nothing.

10

I am not able to stir [*myself.*]

Draw the Curtains.

11

You have caught a violent cold.

I have had it this fort'night.

The wind is changed.

12

We shall have rain.

It will not rain to day.

5. *you*, C. 2. R. 2. C. 3. 9 *it*, C. 3. R. 2.

R. 2.

6. *must*, C. 5. R. 64.

10. *nothing, not, C 5. R.I.*

7. *for it, it me, C. 3.*

11. *sun*, C. 3. R. 1. *mor.*

R. 14. pag. 29.

yourself myself

8. *yourself, myself, C.2.*

R. 6. C. 3. R. 1.

C O M -

Bisogna farvi cavare sangue.

M'è stato cavato sangue due volte.

Mene dispiace; mene duole.

S'abbia cura.

Chi può soffrirlo, or patirlo.

Non so perche il medico non viene.

Bisogna fare animo, non farà niente.

Non mi posso muovere..

Tirate le cortine.

V. S. è molto raffreddato.

Sono quindici giorni che sono raffreddato

Il vento è cambiato.

Averemo della pioggia.

Non pioverà oggi.



COMPOSITION XI.

T Here's a beautifull Lady !

T She is charming, she's handsome.

D ¹ **o** ² **u** ³ **u**
Do you know her.

I ⁴ **d** ² **o** ³ **u**
I do not know her

She has lovely Eyes.

I ⁵ **n** **e** **�** **s**aw a finer shape.

She has an easy genteel air.

The shape of her face is admirable.

Have you taken notice of [*observed*] her Complexion?

I ⁶ **t** **i** **s** the finest in the World.

A Complexion fair and lovely ?

W ⁷ **h** **a** **u** **s** what white hands she has !

S ⁸ **h** **a** **u** **s** She has teeth as white as snow.

1. <i>do</i> , C. 5. R. 51.	5. <i>never</i> , C. 5. R. 1.
2. <i>know</i> , C. 4. R. 22.	6. <i>in the</i> , C. 1. R. 12.
3. <i>her</i> , C. 2. R. 2. C. 3. R. 4.	7. <i>what</i> , C. 5. R. 60.
4. <i>not</i> , C. 3. R. 4.	8. <i>teeth</i> , <i>snow</i> , &c. C. 1. R. 1.

One

C O M P O S I T I O N XI.

E *Eco una bella Signóra, or giovane !*

E vezzósa, è leggiádra.

La conoscéte ?

Non la conóscio.

Hà belli occhi.

Non hò mai visto una più bella statúra.

E disinvólta.

Il giro del viso è ben fatto.

Avete osservato il suo sangue, or la sua carnaggidne ?

E'l più bel sangue del mondo.

Una carnaggidne bianca e viváce.

O che belle mani hà !

Hà i denti bianchi come la neve.

9 One [they] may say [that] she is a fair beauty.

She walks agreeably.

She has a sprightly look.

She has surprising charms.

She is mightily cryed up for a beauty.

10 I think [that] she has a great deal of wit.

8 Beauty may be seen but not wit.

9 They say [that] she has as much wit as beauty.

8 Then she is an epitome of all perfections.

9. one, they, C. 3. R. 4. 11. a great deal of, C. 5.
10. that, C. 3. R. 8. R. 34.



Si può dire ch'ella è una bella bionda.

Cómica con belle maniöre, con bel garbo.

Hà una fisionomia spiritoſa.

Hà fattezze vaghe.

E molto commendata in bellezza.

Credo ch' abbia molto spirito.

Ben si può vedér la bellezza, ma lo spirito nò.

Si dice che sia adeguato lo spirito alle sue bellezze.

E' adunque un compendio di tutte le perfezzioni.



COM-

COMPOSITION XII.

THe desire of my brother, for the study of the Italian tongue, is the cause that the passion [that] he had for hunting, gaming and the Instruments of musick, are at present much abated. If he had believed the advice [that] you did give him formerly, he would have then begun to have studied the principles of it; would have known a part of the difficulties; and would have made many Voyages with a great Prince who [that] would have had him.

1. <i>The, C. 1. R. 2. Table</i>	9. <i>hunting, &c. C. 1.</i>
of articles No. 1.	<i>R. 1.</i>
2. <i>of my, C. 1. R. 18. pag.</i>	10. <i>of, C. 1. R. 18.</i>
31. note 1.	11. <i>if, C. 5. R. 29.</i>
3. <i>the, C. 1. R. 2. Table of</i>	12. <i>him, C. 2. R. 3.</i>
articles No. 2.	<i>C. 3. R. 1.</i>
4. <i>of the, C. 1. R. 10.</i>	13. <i>to, C. 3. R. 16.</i>
5. <i>is cause, C. 1. R. 14.</i>	14. <i>of it, C. 3. R. 14.</i>
6. <i>that, C. 3. R. 8.</i>	<i>C. 3. R. 2.</i>
7. <i>the, C. 1. R. 2. Table of</i>	15. <i>a great, C. 5. R. 11.</i>
articles No. 3.	16. <i>him, C. 2. R. 3.</i>
8. <i>that, C. 3. R. 8. pag. 10.</i>	<i>C. 3. R. 1.</i>

COMPOSITION XII.

IL desiderio di mio fratello per lo studio della lingua Italiana, è cagione che gli ardori c'aveva per la caccia, i giuochi e gli strumenti di musica, sono adesso molto moderati: s' havesse creduto gli avvissi che gli davate altre volte, haverrebbe all' hora cominciato di studiarne i principii, saperebbe una parte delle difficultà, et haverrebbe fatto molti viaggi col un gran principe che lo voleva haver.



O

C O M.

C O M P O S I T I O N XIII.

Y¹OU had promised me ² that you would
 send us ¹ the ² book that we had asked of
 you, and you have not ² sent it to us.

I had promised it ³ to you, it is true, I
 remember it [^{me} ³ of it]; but you should have
 sent to demand it ⁵ of me, and I would have
 sent it ³ to you.

Do not put your self to any more trouble
 about it, I know that my sister has one of them:
 Here is my servant, I will bid him go to her
 House to ask it of her: Go with all speed to
 my sister's, you shall tell her that I pray her to
 lend me her Manuscript, and that I will send
 it her back in an hour.

1. *me, us, of you, C. 2.* 3. *it to us, it to you, me of it,*
R. 3. C. 3. R. 1. 2. *C. 2 R. 3. C. 3. R. 1.*
 2. *that, C. 3. R. 8.* and pag. 28. seq.

COMPOSITION XIII.

M' havevate promesso che ci inviereste il libro che vi havevamo domandato, e non cel' havete mandato.

Vel' havevo promesso, è vero, mene ricordo, ma bisognava mandare a domandarmelo, e vel' houverei inviato.

Non vene pigliate più fastidio, sò che mia sorella n' bâ uno: Eccoli 'l mio servo, gli dirò d' andar da lei per domandarglielo: Vâ quanto prima da mia sorella, le dirai che la prego di prestarmi il suo Manuscritto, e che le rimanderò frà un hora.

4. remember, C. 4. R. 1.	13. my, her, C. 4. R. 1.
5. to, C. 4. R. 17.	14. will, C. 5. R. 58.
6. it of me, C. 2. R. 3. C. 3. R. 2. and pag. 29.	15. him C. 2. R. 3.
7. do, C. 5. R. 51.	16. House, C. 5. R. 8.
8. yourself, about it, C. 2. R. 6. C. 3. R. 1. and page 29.	17. so, C. 4. R. 18.
9. know, C. 4. R. 22.	18. it of her, C. 3. R. 2. pag. 78. note;
10. my, C. 2. R. 1. pag. 31. note 1.	19. to, C. 5. R. 8.
11. of them, C. 2. R. 8. C. 3. R. 1.	20. her, C. 2. R. 3. C. 3. R. 1. me, C. 3. R. 2.
12. here C. 5. R. 37.	21. to, C. 4. R. 16.
	22. it, C. 3. R. 4.
	23. in, C. 5. R. 28.

COMPOSITION XIV.

There is a man who says [that] there was
 yesterday a great uproar in the street,
 where there were three men killed; and he
 swears [that] if he had been there, there would
 have been many more of them, because he has
 known [that] there were wounded two of his
 friends; that two women and three Children have
 been maimed [in it]. They talk also of several
 Merchants, who the passengers report to have been
 cruelly beaten [in it] and that of ten soldiers
 that are in prison, there will be four of them
 hanged, and that six of them are condemned
 to the gallies.

1. <i>there</i> , C. 5. R. 57.	5. <i>great</i> , C. 5. R. 11.
2. <i>a</i> , C. 5. R. 11.	6. <i>in the</i> , C. 1. R. 20.
3. <i>who</i> , C. 3. R. 8.	7. <i>if</i> , C. 1. R. 29.
4. <i>that</i> , <i>ibid.</i>	8. <i>there</i> , see pag. 110, note 2.

COMPOSITION XIV.

V' è ora un buono che dice che vi fu ieri un gran
rumore nella strada, ove furono uccisi tre
buonini, e giura che se vi fosse stato, vene sarebbero stati
molto più, perché bā saputo che v' erano stati feriti
due amici suoi; che due donne, e tre fanciulli vi sono
stati strappati: Si parla anche di molti mercanti che i
viandanti dicono esservi stati atrocemente battuti, e
che di diaci soldati che sono in prigione, vene faranno
quattro impiccati, e che vene sono sei condannati in galera.

9. *of them*, C. 3. R. 14. 11. *in it*, C. 3. R. 14.
and see pag. 48. 12. *they*, C. 3. R. 13.
10. *known*, C. 3. R. 22. 13. *of*, C. 1. R. 18.

COMPOSITION XV.

O ¹UR father who art in heaven, hallowed ²
 be thy ⁴ name, thy ⁴ kingdom come, thy ⁴
 will be done in earth as it is in heaven: Give ⁵
 us this day ⁶ our ⁷ daily bread, and forgive ⁸
 us our trespasses as we forgive them that trespass ⁹
 against us [*to our debtors*] and lead us not into ⁶
 temptation, but deliver us from evil, for thine is ⁹
 the kingdom, the power and the glory for ever and
 ever. Amen.

1. <i>Our</i> , C. 2. R. 1. pag. 31. note	6. <i>us</i> , C. 2. R. 3. C. 3. R. 2.
2. <i>who</i> , C. 3. R. 8.	7. <i>our</i> , C. 2 R. 1.
3. <i>in the</i> , C. 1. R. 7.	8. <i>them</i> , Table of Articles, Pl.
4. <i>thy</i> , C. 2. R. 1.	9. <i>into</i> , C. 5 R. 28.
5. <i>in</i> , C. 5. R. 28.	

COMPOSITION XV.

Padre nostro che sei ne' cieli, sia santificato il tuo nome, venga il tuo regno, sia fatta la tua volontà in terra come l'è in cielo: dacci oggi il nostro pane quotidiano, e rimittici i nostri debiti, sì come ancora noi gli rimettiamo ai nostri debitori, e non indurci in tentazione, mà liberaci dal male, perciocché tuo è il regno, la potenza, e la gloria in sempiterno, Amen.



COM-

COMPOSITION. XVI.

I believe in God, the Father almighty, maker
 of Heaven and Earth, and in Jesus Christ
 his only ² Son our Lord, who was conceived by
 [of] the Holy Ghost, born ³ of the Virgin Mary, suf-
 fered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, dead and
 buried; he descended ⁴ into Hell, he rose the third
 day from the dead, he ascended ⁵ into heaven, sit-
 teth ⁷ at the right hand ³ of God the Father Al-
 mighty, from thence he shall come to judge the
 quick and the dead.

I believe in the Holy Ghost, the holy Catho-
 lick Church, the Communion of saints, the for-
 giveness of sins, the resurrection of the body, and
 the life everlasting. *Amen*

1. *of*, C. 1. R. 10.2. *his*, our, C. 2. R. 1.

pag. 31. note.

3. *of*, C. 1. R. 18.4. *into*, C. 1. R. 20.5. *from the*, C. 1. R. 18.6. *into*, C. 5. R. 28.7. *at the*, C. 1. R. 19.

C O M P O S I T I O N XVI.

Io credo in Dio, il Padre Onnipotente, Creatore del cielo e della terra, e in Gesù Christo unico suo Figliuolo nostro Signore, il qual fù concepito di Spirito Santo, nacque di Maria Vergine, patì sotto Pontio Pilato, fù crocifisso, morto e sepolto, discese agli inferi, risuscitò il terzo giorno da' morti, è salito in cielo, siede alla destra di Dio Padre Onnipotente, di là verrà a giudicar' i vivi e i morti.

Io credo nello Spirito Santo, la santa chiesa Cattolica, la communion de' Santi, la rimessione de' peccati, la risurrezion del corpo, e la vita eterna. Amen.

8. from, C. 1. R. 18. 9. to, C. 4. R. 17.

10. in the, C. 1. R. 20.

C O M-

COMPOSITION. XVII.

I Have said, I will take heed to my ways, that I offend not with my tongue.

I will keep my mouth with a bridle whilst the wicked shall be before me.

I was dumb, and silent, I kept myself from good, but my pain was increased.

My heart was hot within me, and a fire was kindled within me [in my mind,] wherefore I spoke with my tongue, saying,

Lord, let me know my end, and what is the number of my days, that I may know how long I have yet to live in this world.

Behold, thou hast made my days a span long, and the time of my life is as nothing before thee; verily every man living is altogether vanity.

O havea detto, io prenderò guardia alle mie vie, ch'io non peocchi con la mia lingua.

Io guarderò la mia bocca con un frenello, mentre l'empio farà davanti à me.

Io sono stato muto, e cheto: hò etiandio tacitato il bene: mà la mia doglia s'è innasprita.

Il mio cuore s'è riscaldato dentro di me: un fuoco s'è acceso, mentre iorantolgeva questo nell'animo mio: onde io bò parlato con la mia lingua: dicendo.

O Signora, fammi conoscere il mio fine, e quale è il termine de' miei di: fù ch'io sappia quanto io hò da vivere albera in questo mondo.

Ecco, tu hai ridotti i miei di alla misura d'un palmo, e'l tempo della mia vita è come niente appo te: certo, ogni uomo, quantunque sia in pie, è tutta vanità.

Affuredly,

Affuredly, man walketh in a vain shadow, and certainly in vain disquieteth himself, he heappeth up riches, without knowing to whom they shall be gathered.

And now, Lord, what do I regard? my hope is in thee.

Deliver me from all my offences, and make me not to be the rebuke of the foolish.

I became dumb, and opened not my mouth, for it was thy doing, or thou had done this.

When thou doft chafthen one for sin, thou makeft to conſume away whatever there is comely and excellent in him, like as a moth; verily, every man is vanity.

O lord, hear my prayer, and give ear to my calling, and be not deaf to my tears.

For I am a stranger with thee, and a fojourner as all my fathers were.

O ſpare me a little that I may recover my strength before I go hence, and be no more ſeen.

Certo buomo va e viene in figura: certo in vano si travagliano tutti, ed adunano de beni, senza sapere chi gli raccord.

Mà hora, Signore, che aspettavo è la mia speranza è in te.

Liberami da tutti i miei mifatti: non farmi eſſere il vituperio dello ſtolo.

Io ammuntolisco, io non apriro la bocca: perciòche tu mi faiſta queſto.

Se tu gaſtighi alcuno con gaſtigamenti d'iniquità, tu fai ſtruggere tutto ciò che u'è di bella e d'eccelente in lui, come una tignuola: certo, ogni buomo è vanità.

Signore, ascolta la mia oratione, e pergi l'orecchio al mio grido, e non eſſer ſordo alle mie lagrime.

Percioche io ſon foreſſiere appa te, ad avventicio, come tutti i miei padri.

Ceffati da me, accioche io mi rinforzi, innanzi ch'io me ne vada, e non ſia più

C O M-

COMPOSITION XVIII.

O Come, let us sing joyfully unto the Lord: let us rejoice in the strength of our salvation.

Let us come before his presence with thanksgiving: and shew our selves glad in him with psalms.

For the Lord is a great God: and a great king above all gods.

In his hand are all the corners of the earth: and the heighth of the hills are his also.

The sea is his, and he made it: and his hands prepared the dry land.

O come, let us worship, and fall down: and kneel before the Lord our maker.

For he is the Lord our God and we are the people of his pasture, and the sheep of his hand.

To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts: as in the provocation, and as in the day of temptation in the wilderness;

V Enite, cantiamo lietamente al Signore, giubiliamo alla rocca della nostra salute.

Andiamgli incontro con lodi, giubiliamogli con salmi

Percioche il Signore è Dio grande, e Re grande sopra tutti gl' Iddii.

Percioche egli tiene in mano le profondità della terra, e l'altezze de' monti sono sue.

Ed a lui appartiene il mare, perche egli l'ha fatto: e l'asciutto, perche le sue mani l'han formato.

Venite adoriamo, ed inchiniamci, inginocchiamci davanti al Signore, che ci ha fatti.

Percioche egli è il nostro Dio, e noi siamo il popolo del suo pasco, e la greggia della sua condotta.

Hoggi se udite la sua voce, non indurate il vostro cuore, come nella provocazione, e come nel giorno della tentazione nel deserto.

When your fathers tempted me; proved me, and saw my works.

Forty years long was I grieved with this generation, and said, it is a people that do err in their hearts, for they have not known my ways.

Unto whom I swear in my wrath, that they should not enter into my rest.

Ove i padri vostri mi tentarono, mi pruovarono; & anche videro le mie opere.

Lo spatio di quarant' anni quella generatione mi fu di noia, onde Io dissi, Costoro sono un popolo fuiato di cuore, e non conoscono le mie vie.

Perciò giurai nell' ira mia, se entrano giammìa mio riposo.

COMPOSITION XIX.

LET every soul be subject to the higher powers; for there is no power but of God: the powers that be, are ordained of God. Who-foever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receive to themselves damnation. For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be

O GNI persona sia sottoposta alle podestà superiori: Perchioche non v' è podestà senon da Dio: E le podestà che sono, son da Dio ordinate. Tal che chi resiste alla podestà resiste all' ordinanza di Dio; e quelli che vi resistono, ne riceveranno giudicio sopra loro. Concio sia cosa che i Magistrati non sieno di spavento alle buone opere, ma alle malvaghe: Hor, vuoi tu non temer della podestà?

afraid

afraid of the power ? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same : for he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid ; for he beareth not the sword in vain : for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doth evil. Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

faccia ch' è bene, e tu baverai lode da essa. Percioche il Magistrato è ministro di Dio per te el bene: Ma se tu fai male, teme; percioche egli non porta indarno la spada; conciosia cosa ch' egli sia ministro di Dio, vendicator in ira contr' a colui che fa ciò ch' è male. Perciò conviene di neceffità efforgli soggetto, non sol per l' ira ma ancho- ra per la coscienza.

COMPOSITION XX.

BE ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. For if any be a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glasse. For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straitway forgetteth what manner of man he

SIATE facitori della parola, e non solo uditori, ingannando voi stessi: percioche se alcuno è uditor della parola, e non facitore, egli è simile ad un huomo che considera la sua natia faccia in uno specchio. Imperocche dopo ch' egli s' è mirato, egli sene va, e subito ha dimenticato quale egli fosse. Ma chi havrà

Where-

was. But who so looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed. If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridle not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain. Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father, is this; to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

riguardato benè ad dentro nella legge perfetta. cb' è la legge della libertà, e farà perseverato; esso non essendo uiditor dimentichevoli, ma facitor dell'opera, farà beato nel suo operare. Se alcuno pare esser religioso fra voi, e non tiene a freno la sua lingua, anzi soddisfa il cuor suo, la religion de' tale è vana: la religion pura ed immaculata appo Iddio il Padre è questa, Visitar gli orfani, e le vedove nelle loro affizioni, e conservarsi puro dal mondo.

C O M P O S I T I O N X X I .

BLESSED is the man that hath not walk-ed in the counsel of the ungodly, nor stood in the way of sinners: and hath not sat in the seat of the scornfull.

But his delight is in the law of the Lord: and in his law will he ex-ercise himself day and night.

BEATO l'huomo, che non è laminato nel consiglio degli anpi, e non s'è fermato nella via de' peccatori, e non è faltato nella sedia degli infernitori.

Anzi il cui diletto è nella legge del Signore, e medita in essa giorno e notte.

He shall be like a tree planted by the water-side: that will bring forth his fruit in due season.

His leaf also shall not wither: and look what-soever he doth, it shall prosper.

As for the ungodly it is not so with them: but they are like the chaff which the wind scattereth away.

Therefore the ungodly shall not be able to stand in the judgment: neither the sinners in the congregation of the righteous.

But the Lord knoweth the way of the righteous: and the way of the ungodly shall perish.

Egli farà come un albero piantato presso à ruscelli d'acque, il qual rende il suo frutto nella sua stagione.

E le cui frondi non appassano: e tutto quello ch' egli farà prospererà.

Così non faranno già gli empi: anzi faranno come pula soffinta dal vento.

Per cio gli empi non staranno ritti nel giudicio, né i peccatori nella rauanza de' giusti.

Percioche il Signore conosce la via de' giusti: ma la via degli empi perirà.

Note, The Learner may furnish himself with more English Lessons from the Psalms, or other Part of the Book of Common-Prayer, Testament, or other good Author, and correct them by the same in Italian.



Te

To the LEARNER.

* * * In making the foregoing *Compositions*, or other *Lessons* that may be given, it will frequently occur that some Words in the *Italian*, by an allegorical or different Expression or Turn, give more Elegance and Grace to the Language, I shall therefore here set down for the Learner's Improvement, certain *Verbs* and *Prepositions* that have various Significations and require his attention.

ANDARE, to go; &c.

A *Andare dietro*, to follow; to press, to solicit a Person.

Andar' in amore, to be in love.

Andare via, to go away.

Andar' in estasi, to be raised, or in extasy.

Andar male, to perish.

Andar' in collera, to be angry, to put oneself in a passion.

Andar' a donne, to visit the Ladies.

Andar' in cerca, to search up and down.

Andar' a cercar rogna, to seek trouble.

Andar' a gala, to float, or swim on the Water.

Andar' in buon ora, to go in peace,

Andar' in mal' ora, to be ruined.

Andar per le peste, to be beaten.

Andar' alla longa, to be tedious.

Andar' alle corte, to make haste.

Andar di corpo, to go slow.

Andar' attorno, to run up and down.

Andar' altero, to be proud.

Andar dietro ad una cosa, to stand trifling with any thing.

Andar per la mente, to come into one's mind.

Andar di mal in peggio, out of the Frying pan into the fire.

Andar mal in arnese, to be ill dressed.

Andar a gambe levate, to lose, or squander away his estate.

Andar a cavallo, to ride a Horseback.

Andar per viole, to speak impertinently.

Andare in bestia, to be in a passion.

Andare grosso, to look big.

Andar ad botte, to be a Soldier.

Andar alla busea, to go a plundering.

Andar in cimbalis, to be transported with joy.

Andar in succchio to have one's Mouth water.

Andar vuota, to miss one's aim.

Andar per filo, to be forced to do a thing.

Andar in sincopi, to fall in a swoon.

Andar in piccardia, to go and be hanged.

Andar sopra le parole, to trust to fair words.

Andar per il mondo, to travel.

Andar spanto, to be dressed extravagantly.

Andarsene preso alle grida, to believe every idle Report

A lungo andare, at long run.

D A R E, to give, &c.

Dar d' occhio, to cast one's Eyes on.

Dare ad alto ad uno, to throw one's self upon a Person.

Darsi a gambe, to run away.

Dar

Dar nella rete, to fall into a Snare.
Dar le carte, to deal, or give the Cards.
Dar' animo, to give courage, or to incourage.
Darsi l' animo, to have Courage.
Dar fede, to believe.
Dar' ad intendere, to make one believe.
Dar' in nulla, not to succeed.
Darsi l' incenso, to praise one's self.
Dar' in luce, to publish.
Darsi a fare, to set one self about a Thing.
Dar nel rosso, to be a little on the Red.
Darsi pensiere, to care for.
Dar del signore, to call one a Gentleman.
Dar del furbante, to call one a Rogue.
Dar parola, to promise.
Dar ne' ladri, to fall into the Hands of Thieves.
Dar la burla, to laugh at a Person.
Dar leva, to provoke.
Dar in prestito, to lend.
Dar fuoco, to burn, or set on fire.
Dar sicurtà, to Bail.
Dar nel matto, to play the fool.
Dar la caccia, to put to flight.
Dar principio, or *fine*, to begin, or end.
Dar conto, to give an account.
Darsi allo studio, to apply one's self to Study.
Dar calci al vento, & *pugni all' aria*, to fight with one's Shadow.
Dar di bocca d'ap pertutta, to concern one's self with every Man's Businels.
Dar da ridere, ~~da parlare~~, to make one Laugh, to make one Speak.
Darsi bel tempo, to divert one's self.
Dar addietro, to give back.

[166]

Dar adito, to give access to.
Dar alla mano, to Bribe.
Dar a' uedere, to give one to understand.
Dar campo, to give Liberty.
Dar capo, to come to the end of a Matter.
Dar copimento, to finish.
Dar da bere, to give one Drink.
Dar da dormire, to give one a Night's Lodging.
Dar de' gl' ingoffi, to give a good box o'th' Ear.
Dar il batismo, to baptize.
Dar il buon anno, to wish a merry New-year.
Dar un buon giorno, to bid one Good Morrow.
Dar il buon viaggio, to wish one a good Journey.
Dar il buon arrivo, to bid one Welcome.
Dar il grande Addio, to bid the World Adieu.
Dar il viso, to turn one's Eyes on any Thing.
Dar in Terra, to run aground.
Dar la ben-venuta, to bid one friendly welcome.
Dar la buona mano, to wish one good Luck.
Dar l' anello, to marry.
Dar la voce, to raise a Report.
Dar l' ultimo crollo, to fall down stark dead.
Dar la vinta, to yield the Victory.
Darsi to apply one's self to.
Darsi pace, to live quietly.

F A R E, to do, &c.

Far animo, to give Courage.
Farfi animo, to take Courage.
Pare a proposito, to be proper, or fit.
Far motto, to make a Sign.
Far il bravo, to set up for a Bully.
Fare scelta, to chuse.
Far pompa, to boast.

Dar

Far' il grugno, to pout at one.
Far danari, to heap up Money.
Far gente, or *soldati*, to raise Soldiers.
Far di mestieri, to be necessary.
Farfi innanzi, to come forward.
Farfi in quà, to approach, or advance.
Farfi in là, to go at a distance.
Farfi in dietro, to retire.
Far a sepere, to let one know.
Far a tacei, to throw or fight with Stones.
Far avanzo, to thrive.
Far baco baco, to play Bo-peep.
Far broglia, to make a hurley-burley.
Far buona vicinanza, to keep fair with one's Neighbours.
Far com lo speraviere, to live from Hand to Mouth.
Far cose di fuoco, to do wonderful Things.
Far del grande, to take State upon one.
Far del vezzoso, to play the wanton.
Far di capello, to pull of one's Hat.
Far d' una lancia un fuso, to bring a Noble to nine pence.
Far faccia, to set a good Face on Things.
Far fagotto, to pack up one's Awls and be gone.
Far Figliuoli, to begat and bear Children.
Far gala, to be gay and Merry.
Far govoriglia, to throw the House out at the Window.
Far greppo, to make up a Mouth.
Fare i fatti suoi, to follow his own Affairs.
Fare il balordo, to play the Ninny.
Far il diavolo, to play the Devil.
Far il gattone, to make as if one saw or knew not.
Fare le spese, to bear one's Charges.

S T A R E, to stand, &c.

Starre in piedi, to stand upright.
Starre su to rise;
Starre giù to sit down.
Starre per uscire, to be just going out.
Starre ben a cavallo, to sit well on Horseback.
Starre' in casa, to stay at home.
Starre lesto, to be upon one's Guard.
Starre su le burle, to jest, to banter.
Starre saldo, to hold out stoutly, or fast.
Starre per cadere, to be ready to fall.
Starre per morire, to be like to die.
Starre' in dubbio, to be in doubt.
Starre' a vedere, to expect the Issue.
Starre colle mani a cintola, or *a cintura*, to stand idle,
 or with one's hands in one's Pocket.
questo vi sta bene, that becomes you well.
questo non mi sta bene, that does not become me well.
Starre' a buco, to out-face.
Starre' a bottega, to mind one's Shop.
Starre' a crepa cuore, to live at Heart's Ease.
Starre' in disagio, to live in Sorrow.
Starre' a dormire, to lye Sleeping.
Starre' a fronte, to out-face.
Starre' a gala, to float.
Starre' al detto, to rely on a Man's Word.
Starre' allegro, to live, or be merry.
Starre' al mondo, to live in the World.
Starre' a pollo pesto, to be at the Point of Death.
Starre' a segno to stand near the Mark.
Starre' in speranza, to live in Hopes.
Starre' a svento, to live in sorrow.

Star' superbo, to be Hall Fellow well met;
 Star' a uno, to depend upon one.
 Star' innamorato, to be in Love.
 Star' in letto, to be abed.
 Star' in molle, to lye asleep.
 Star' in orecchio, to hearken.
 Star' in riscchio, to be in Danger.
 Star' in sé, to be positive.
 Star' in zurlo, to stand in Amaze;
 Star' maggiere, to live Idle.
 Star' sopra di sé, to presume too much on one's self.
 Star' punta per punta, to be always at Variance.
 Star' fano, to be in Health.
 Star' fu'l aviso, to be prepar'd.
 Star' trà'l sì 'l nò, to be between yes and no.

A V E R E, to have.

Aver dell' huomo da bene, to look like an honest Man.
 Aver del miracolo, to look on't as a Maricle.
 Aver caro, aver da caro, to be well pleas'd.
 Aver a bene, to approve of.
 Aver per bene, to like or consent to.
 Aver per male, to disapprove of.
 Aver a male, to dislike.
 Aver a cuore, to have at Heart.
 Aver 'l capo altrove, to think of other Things.
 Aver de fare, to be busie.
 Aver in pregio, in istima, to esteem.
 Aver a capitale, to esteem much.
 Aver a dispetto, to have in despite.
 Aver agio, to be at ease.
 Aver bel Tempo, to live a merry Life.
 Aver buona voce, to be well spoken of.

Aver

Aver che che si sia per un pezzo di pane, to have a Thing Dog cheap.
Aver del tondo, have little Wit.
Aver destro, to have fit Occasion.
Aver di che, to have wherewith.
Aver dietro, to contemn.
Aver di gratia, to take it as a Favour.
Aver fretta, to be in haste.
Aver fumo, to be Proud.
Aver il cervello che voli, to have a roving Head.
Aver in su le dita, to have at ones Fingers end.
Aver le gambata, to were the Willow-green
Aver l'occhio al pennello to mind one's Busines.
Aver le mani ad uno, to hold one fast at his Pleasure.
Aver mezzo, or modo, to be able, or have Means.
Aver nell'idea, to bear in Mind.
Aver occhio, to have a fair Outside.
Aver odore, to have an inkling of a Thing.
Aver ombra, to be fearful of.
Aver pensiere, to be full of Care, or Thoughtful.
Aver piede, to get footing.
Aver poco sale in zucca, to have but little Wit.

ESSERE, to be, &c.

Effer per fare, to be just going to do.
Effer da qualche cosa, to be good for something.
Effer da poco, to have but little Wit.
Effer da niente, to be good for nothing.
Effer di giovamento, to help, to assist.
Effer di buona nascita, to come of a good Family.
Effer per la mala via; to be ruin'd, to be in a bad condition.
Effer per le fratte, to be undone or ruin'd.
Effer fuor di bologna, to be ignorant.

Effer

Esser a grado, to be acceptable.
Esser a mal partito, to be in a bad taking.
Esser in questione, to squabble.
Esser ben veduto, to be kindly entertain'd.
Esser di poco levata, to be of small worth.
Esser di testa, to be hare-brain'd.
Esser in Essero, to be in State, Quality, and Condition.
Esser in fiori, to be in one's Prime.
Esser in fortuna, to be lucky.
Esser in pagliuola, to be in Child-bed.
Esser in predicamento, to be in Consideration.
Esser in procinto, to be always ready.
Esser in succchio, to have one's Mouth water.
Esser in uggia, to be troublesome to others.
Esser 'pace, Quits at play.
Esser una coppa d'oro, to be one of a Thousand.

S A P E R E, to know, &c.

Sapere a mente, to know by heart.
Saper' a mena dita, to have at one's Finger's ends.
Saper male, to be sorry.
Saper di buono, *saper buono*, to smell well.
Saper di cattivo, to smell ill.
Saper di niente, to have no Smell, to smell of nothing.
Saper' trovar il pelo nelle uova, to be cunning, to be sharp.
Ti sò dire, I can tell thee.
Saperse per 'l senno, to know by Rote,

T E N R E E, to hold, &c.

Tenere da uno, to be of one's Side.
Tenere per galanti'huomo, to believe one an honest Man.
Tener le lagrime, to forbear Weeping.

Q

Tener

Tener le risa, to hold Laughing.
 Tener conto d'uno, to make account of, to esteem a Person.
 Tenerla per sé, to keep a Thing to one's self.
 Tener a mente, call to mind.
 Tenere a battesimo, to stand Godfather.
 Tener mano a ladri, to be accessory to a Theft.
 Tener carrozza, servitori, to keep a Coach, Servants.
 Tener l' invito, to accept of what is propos'd.
 Tener a pivolo, to live at Rack and Manger.
 Tener a sua posta, to keep one at his Beck,
 Tener corte bandita, to keep open-house.
 Tener a bada, to hold in suspense.
 Tener firme, to keep one's Word.
 Tener in bocca, to keep a Secret.
 Tener la bestia in cavazza, to bridle one's Appetites.
 Tener le poste, to hold Stakes.
 Tener mano, to lend a Hand to.
 Tener mente, to heed.
 Tener mercato, to bargain.
 Tener ragione, to judge according to Law.

V O L E R E, to be willing &c.

Vogliono alcuni, some believe.
 Volerla con una, to set upon one.
 Voler bene, to love.
 Voler male, to hate.
 Voler più tosto, to have rather.
 Volere la gatta, to pick a Quarrel with one.
 Volesse pur Dio, Oh would to God.

V E N I R E, to come, &c.

Venir meno, to fall into a Weakness, or to faint.
 Vener

Vener in succio, to have one's Mouth water.

Venir in forte, to fall to one's Lot.

Venir fatto nome, to go by the name of. *

Venir stimato, to be esteem'd.

Venire alle strette, to come to Blows.

Non mi viene bene, it does not please me.

questo vi viene bene, that becomes you well.

Venir voglia, to have a Mind, or Desire.

Venir adesso, to fall upon.

Venir alle prese, to come to close Fight.

Venir a dire, to import, or mean.

Venir alle mani, to come to Handy-blows.

Venir fallito, to miss of one's Aim, or Purpose.

Phrases in Dialogues.

HOW do you do
Sir ; Madam ?

Very well at your service.

Where do you go, or
will you go ?

I cannot,

Do me the favour.

I would if I was able.

I wish to God that I was
able.

I would do it with all my
heart.

It pleases me ; it does
not please me.

Frasi in Dialogo.

COME stà mio Signo-
re ; mia Signora ;
come stà V. S. ?

Benissimo per servirla, al
suo servizio, a' suoi cenni.

Dove va, o vuol' andar
V. S. ?

Non posso.

La priego mi faccia il favo-
re ; mi favorista di sic.

Vorrei se potessi.

Voleffe laddio ch' is potessi.

Lo farei di tutto cuore.

Mi piace ; non mi piace.

It seems so to me ; it is my opinion.	<i>Mi pare così ; sono di questo parere.</i>
I know not what to do ;	<i>Non so che farci.</i>
I cannot help it.	<i>Non potevo fare a meno di.</i>
I wonder at it.	<i>Mene meraviglio.</i>
I must do it.	<i>Hò bisogno di farlo.</i>
I have a great mind for it.	<i>N' hò grandissima voglia, ne mero di voglia.</i>
I am very glad of it.	<i>No godo ; mene rallegra.</i>
I am sorry for it.	<i>Mene dispiace, mene duole</i>
I wish you joy.	<i>La felicito ; mene congra- tulo.</i>
I am impatient for it.	<i>Ne sono impaziente.</i>
I shall esteem it a favour.	<i>L'avrò per favore ; mi crederò favorito.</i>
Sir, I know not what you say.	<i>Non so quel che dice V. S.</i>
I am glad to see you in good health.	<i>Godo, hò caro verderla in buone salute.</i>
I will go to your House ; I will not fail.	<i>Verrò da lei ; non mancher- rò, senza fallo.</i>
I am much obliged to you.	<i>Le sono molto obligato</i>
I ask your pardon.	<i>Mi scusi V. S. mi perdoni.</i>
They tell me.	<i>Mi vien detto.</i>
Believe me ; answer me ; hear me,	<i>Mi creda ; mi risponda ; mi senta ; m'ascolti.</i>
Write to me ; speak to me ; excuse me ; tell me, give me.	<i>Mi scriva, mi parli, mi scusi, mi dica, mi dia.</i>
What do you think of it ?	<i>Che ne pensa ?</i>
What o'Clock is it ?	<i>Che ora è ?</i>
What news is there ?	<i>Che nuova ?</i>
What do they say of it ?	<i>Che sene dice ?</i>

What

What weather is it?	Che tempo fa?
Upon my honour ; upon my word.	Sul' onor mio ; sulla mia parola.
How can he do it.	Come può farlo.
How long is it since you are come?	Quanto è ch' è venuta?
How long have you stayed?	Quanto è stata V. S.?
How old are you.	Quanti anni ha?
When will you do me the favour to come to my house?	Quando mi vuol' onorare della sua presenza?
When you please.	Quando le piacerà ; quando vorrà ; quando le farà comodo.
Make no noise ; be not afraid.	Non faccia romore ; non tempa.
Stay a little.	Stia un poco più.
It is early, it is not late.	E troppo di buon' ora, non è tardi.
There is time enough.	Vi è tempo abbastanza.
You are welcome.	Ben venuto.
I had forgot it.	M'era uscito di mente.
God bless you.	Iddio la benedica.
Will you change place?	Vuol cangiare loco.
If you please.	Se le piace.
Turn to the right hand, to the left.	Volti alla dritta, alla manica.
At what o'Clock do you dine?	A che ora vuol pranzare?
At three o'clock.	Alle tre.
It is dinner time.	E ora di prezzo.
See what a clock it is by your watch.	Veda che ora è al suo orologio.
It is going to rain.	Vuol piover molto.

It is fine weather, bad weather. *Fà bel tempo, cattivo tempo.*

It snows, it freezes. *Nevica, fiocca ; grandina.*

The sun shines ; it is moon-light. *E sole, fà sole ; fà lume di luna, è lume di luna.*

It is done for us, we are ruined. *Siamo perduti, persi.*

Do not trouble yourself about it. *Non sene impicci vo fignoria.*

I will not concern myself about it. *Non mi ci voglio impicciare.*

From whence came you ? *D' onde viene ?*

Which way do they go ? *Per dove si passa ?*

Sir, take care. *Stia V. S. sull'avviso.*

I have nothing to give him. *Non ho che dargli.*

He is in great want. *E in grandissima miseria, calamità.*

Make my compliments to. *Faccia i miei complimenti, porti i miei saluti.*

I will make your compliments. *Porterò le sue grazie.*

You will repent of it afterwards. *Potrà pentirsi poi.*

There are many of a different opinion. *Vene son molti di diverse parere, di varia opinione.*



I Mesi dell' Anno.

The Months of the Year.

January	Gennàro
February	Febràro
March	Márzo
April	Aprile
May	Mággio
June	Giúgno
July	Lugào
August	Agosto
September	Settèmbre
October	Ottòbre
November	Novémbre
December	Decémbre

I Di della Settimana.

The Days of the Week.

Monday	Lunedì
Tuesday	Mártdi
Wednesday	Mércordi
Thursday	Gióvedi
Friday	Vénerdi
Saturday	Sábato
Sunday	Doménica

Le

Le Feste dell'Anno:

The Holy-Days of the Year.

New-year's Day	<i>Il capo d' anno</i>
Twelfth Day, or the Epiphany	<i>Il giorno de' Re, i Epifani</i>
The Purification, or Candlemas Day	<i>La Cerimôla, la Purificazione</i>
Shrove Tuesday	<i>Il Carnavâle</i>
Lent	<i>La Quaréfima</i>
The Ember Weeks	<i>Le quattro tempora</i>
The Passion, or Holy Week.	<i>La settimâna santa</i>
Palm Sunday	<i>La domenica delle Palme</i>
Good Friday	<i>Il Venerdì santo</i>
Easter Day	<i>Il giorno di Pasqua</i>
Low Sunday	<i>La domenica in albis</i>
Rogation Week	<i>Le Rogazâoni</i>
Ascension	<i>L' Ascensione</i>
Whitsunday, or Pentecost	<i>La Pentecoste</i>
Midsummer Day	<i>San Giovânni</i>
All Saints	<i>La festa di tutti i santi</i>
All Souls	<i>Il giorno de' morti</i>
Christmas Day	<i>Natâle, le feste di Natâl</i>
The Eve, or Vigil	<i>La Vigilia</i>
Harvest-time	<i>La Messe</i>
The Vintage	<i>Le Vendémmie</i>
A Holy Day	<i>Giorno di festa</i>

PROPER

PROPER NAMES.

OF

MEN, WOMEN, KINGDOMS, CITIES,
RIVERS, &c.

A	DAM, <i>Adamo</i>	Elizabeth, <i>Elisabeta</i>
	Abraham, <i>Abramo</i>	Eve, <i>Eva</i>
	Anthony, <i>Antonio</i>	Helene, <i>Elena</i>
	Benjamin, <i>Beniamino</i>	Joan, <i>Giovanna</i>
	Charles, <i>Carlo</i>	Eleanor <i>Eleonora</i>
	Edward, <i>Eduardo</i>	Mary, <i>Maria</i>
	Francis, <i>Francesco</i>	Margaret, <i>Margherita</i>
	George, <i>Giorgio</i>	Rachel, <i>Raibel</i>
	Henry, <i>Enrico</i>	Rebecca, <i>Rebecca</i>
	James, <i>Giácomo</i>	Sarah, <i>Sara</i>
	John, <i>Giovanni, Giò</i>	Susan, <i>Susanna</i> .
	Lewis, <i>Lodovico</i>	
	Mark, <i>Marco</i>	Europe, <i>Europa</i>
	Paul, <i>Páolo</i>	Asia, <i>Asia</i>
	Peter, <i>Pietro</i>	Africa, <i>Africa</i>
	Philip, <i>Filippo</i>	America, <i>America</i>
	Richard, <i>Riccardo</i>	The East Indies, <i>Le Indie orientale</i>
	Robert, <i>Roberto</i>	The West Indies, <i>Le Indie occidentale</i>
	Thomas, <i>Tomaso</i>	Great Britain, <i>Gran Bretagna</i>
	William, <i>Guglielmo</i>	England, <i>Inghilterra</i>
	Ann, <i>Anna</i>	London,
	Catherine, <i>Caterina</i>	
	Diana, <i>Diana</i>	

London, <i>Londra</i>	Amsterdam, <i>Amsterdam</i>
Scotland, <i>Scotzia</i>	The Netherlands, <i>or</i>
Edenburg, <i>Edimborgo</i>	Flanders, <i>Fiandra, Paesi</i>
Ireland, <i>Irlanda.</i>	<i>Bassi</i>
Dublin, <i>Dublino</i>	Brussels, <i>Bruxelles</i>
Denmark, <i>Danemarca</i>	Switzerland, <i>Suissa</i>
Copenhagen, <i>Coppenha- gue.</i>	Basil, <i>or</i> Basle, <i>Basilea</i>
Norway, <i>Norvegia</i>	The Grisons, <i>I Grigioni</i>
Sweden, <i>or</i> Sweedland, <i>Suezia</i>	Poland, <i>Polegna</i>
Stockholm, <i>Stoccolme</i>	Cracow, <i>Cracevia</i>
Moscovy, <i>or</i> Russia, <i>Moscovia, Russia</i>	Spain, <i>Spagna,</i>
Moscow, <i>Mosca</i>	Madrid, <i>Madrid</i>
France, <i>Francia</i>	Portugal, <i>Portugallia</i>
Paris, <i>Pariggi</i>	Lisbon, <i>Lisbona</i>
Germany, <i>Germania</i>	Italy, <i>Italia</i>
Vienna, <i>Vienna</i>	Rome, <i>Roma</i>
Holland, the seven U- nited Provinces, <i>Olandi, Provincie Unite</i>	Venice, <i>Venezia</i>
	Turkey in Europe, <i>Tur- chia in Europa</i>
	Constantinople, <i>Constan- tinopoli.</i>



A SMALL
VOCABULARY
 OF
 WORDS in frequent Use.

GOD, *Iddio, Dio*
 Jesus Christ, *Gi-
 su Christo*
 The Holy Ghost, *Lo
 Spirito santo*
 The Trinity, *La Trinità*
 The Virgin Mary, *La
 Vergine.*
 The Angels, *Gli Angeli*
 The Saints, *I Santi*
 Heaven, *Il Cielo*
 Paradise, *Il Paradiso*
 Hell, *L' Inferno*
 The Devils, *I Diávoli*,
 The Fire, *Il Fuoco*
 The Air, *L' Aria*
 The Earth, *La Terra*
 The Water, *L' Acqua*
 The Sea, *Il Mare*
 The Sun, *Il Sole*
 The Moon, *La Luna*

The Stars, *Le Stelle*
 The Wind, *Il Vento*
 The Rain, *La Pioggia*
 The Clouds, *Le Nuvole*
 The Hail, *La Grándine*
 The Lightening, *Il Balé-
 no, il lampo*
 The Thunderbolt, *Il
 Fulmine*
 The Snow, *La Neve*,
 The Frost, *Il Gelo*
 The Ice, *Il Ghiáccio*
 The Dew, *La Rugiáda*
 A Fogg, or Mist, *La
 Nébbia*
 The Spring, *La Primavé-
 ra*
 The Summer, *La State*.
 The Autumn, *L' Au-
 tumno*

The

The Winter, <i>L' Inverno,</i>	A Brother, <i>Fratello</i>
<i>il verno</i>	
The Rainbow, <i>Arco se- leste, Iride</i>	A Sister, <i>Sorella</i>
A Shower, <i>Soffia d' ac- qua</i>	An Uncle, <i>Zio</i>
The New Moon, <i>No- vilunio, Luna nuova</i>	A Grand Father, <i>Avolo,</i> <i>Nonno</i>
The full Moon, <i>Luna piena</i>	A Grand Mother, <i>Avola,</i> <i>Nonna</i>
A Planet, <i>Pianeta</i>	A Son in-law, <i>Género</i>
The East Wind, <i>Levan- te</i>	A Daughter in-law, <i>Nuóra</i>
The West Wind, <i>Ponen- te</i>	A Boy, <i>Garzzone</i>
The North Wind, <i>Tra- montana</i>	A Girl, <i>Giovanetta</i>
The South Wind, <i>Ostro</i>	A Maid or Virgin, <i>Zittal- la, Vérgine</i>
The Tide, <i>Marea, Ma- reggiata</i>	A little Girl, <i>Fanciulla,</i> <i>donzellina</i>
The Stream, <i>la Corrente</i>	A little Boy, <i>Fanciullo,</i> <i>Bambino</i>
A Man, <i>Uómo</i>	An old Man, <i>Vecchio</i>
A Woman, <i>Donna</i>	An old woman, <i>Vecchia</i>
A Bridegroom, <i>Sposo</i>	Bread, <i>Pane</i>
A Bride, <i>Sposa</i> ,	A Pye, <i>Un Pasticcio</i>
A Wife, <i>Moglie</i>	The Sun-rising, <i>Il tra- montár del sole</i>
A Husband, <i>Marito</i>	The Morning, <i>L' Auróra,</i> <i>la mattina</i>
A young Man, <i>Gióvane M.</i>	The Evening, <i>La Sera</i>
A young Woman, <i>Don- zella, Gióvane F.</i>	Noon, <i>Il mezzo dí</i>
A Father, <i>Padre</i>	Midnight, <i>La mézza notte</i>
A Mother, <i>Madre</i>	A Street, <i>Strada</i>
A Son, <i>Figlio</i>	A Town, <i>Borgo, Castello</i>
A Daughter, <i>Figlia</i>	A House, <i>Casa</i>
	A Palace, <i>Palazzo</i>
	A Spirit, <i>Spirito</i>

A Plant, <i>Pianta</i>	A Son in-law, <i>Généro</i>
Grass, <i>Gramigna</i>	A Daughter in-law, <i>Nuôra</i>
The Rain-bow, <i>Iride</i>	A Father in-law, <i>Padrigna</i>
Water, <i>Acqua</i>	A Mother in-law, <i>Suôtera</i>
Wine, <i>Vino</i>	A Nephew, <i>Nepote</i>
Fish, <i>Pesce</i>	A God Father, <i>Sântolo</i>
A Dish, <i>Piatto</i>	The Leg, <i>Gamba</i>
A Napkin, <i>Salviéttta</i>	The Foot, <i>Piede</i>
A Table Cloth, <i>Tovâglia</i>	A Finger, <i>Dito</i>
A spoon, <i>un Cuchíáro</i>	The Thumb, <i>Póllice</i>
Beef, <i>del Búe</i> ,	A Bath, <i>Bagno</i>
Button, <i>del Castrâto</i>	A Shop, <i>Bottega</i>
Veal, <i>del Vitello</i>	A Way, <i>Strada</i>
Lamb, <i>del Agnello</i>	An Inn, <i>Osteria</i>
A Cock, <i>un Gallo</i>	A Lock, <i>Serratura</i>
A Hen, <i>una Gallina</i>	A Key, <i>Chiave</i>
The Soul, <i>ândma</i>	A Well, <i>Pozzo</i>
A Brother-in-law, <i>Cognato</i>	A Pump, <i>Pompa</i>
	Beer, <i>Birra</i> .

*** It is observed in my *Rules for the French Tongue*, that I think it needless to fill Grammars with a tedious Vocabulary of dry Words, which serve to very little Purpose, unless to enlarge the Books, and I repeat the same here, that I have always found a greater Improvement among my Scholars, by their Writing down, and making a Collection daily from the Dictionary, of Words in both Languages, and for this Reason no more are here set down, for I would not have my Scholars talk like Parrots, without understanding; but apply themselves to the various Signification of Words, which can be best learnt from the Dictionary only.

Numbers, I Numeri.

1	2	3	4	5	6
Uno, duoi, tre, quattro, cinque, sei,					
8	9	10	11	12	13
otto, nove, dieci, undici, dodici, trenta, quin-					
15	16	17	18		
quindici, sedici, dieci sette, dieci otto, die-					
20	21	30	40		
vinti, vinto uno, trenta, quaranta, cin-					
60	70	80	90	100	
sessanta, settanta, ottanta, novanta, cento,					
300	1000	100,000	1,000,000		
trecento, mille, cento mila, milione, or miglio					

Ordinal Numbers.

The first, <i>primo</i>	The sixteenth, <i>sesto</i>
The second, <i>secondo</i>	The seventeenth, <i>settimo</i>
The third, <i>terzo</i>	The eighteenth, <i>ottavo</i>
The fourth, <i>quarto</i>	The nineteenth, <i>nono</i>
The fifth, <i>quinto</i>	The twentieth, <i>decimo</i>
The sixth, <i>sesto</i>	The twenty-first, <i>fimo primo</i>
The seventh, <i>settimo</i>	The hundredth, <i>centesimo</i>
The eighth, <i>ottavo</i>	The thousandth, <i>millesimo</i>
The ninth, <i>nono</i>	The middlemost, <i>mezzo</i>
The tenth, <i>décimo</i>	The Last, <i>ultimo</i> .
The eleventh, <i>undécimo</i>	
The twelfth, <i>duodécimo</i>	
The thirteenth <i>décimo</i> <i>terzo</i>	
The Fourteenth, <i>décimo</i> <i>quarto</i>	
The fifteenth, <i>décimo</i> <i>quinto</i>	Concerning

9.

I am— are	erò, erái, erà, erémo, eréte, eráno
2 cred— ere	erò, erái, erà, erémo, eréte, eráno
3 sent— ire	irò, irái, irà, irémo, iréte, iráno

I am— are	erò, erái, erà, erémo, eréte, eráno
2 cred— ere	erò, erái, erà, erémo, eréte, eráno
3 sent— ire	irò, irái, irà, irémo, iréte, iráno

4.

I am— are	erò, erái, erà, erémo, eréte, eráno
2 cred— ere	erò, erái, erà, erémo, eréte, eráno
3 sent— ire	irò, irái, irà, irémo, iréte, iráno

IMPERATIVE Mood.

5.

I am— are	a, i, iámo, áte, ino
2 cred— ere	i, a, iámo, éte, ano, & ino
3 sent— ire	i, a, iámo, íte, ano & ino.

I am— are	a, i, iámo, áte, ino
2 cred— ere	i, a, iámo, éte, ano, & ino
3 sent— ire	i, a, iámo, íte, ano & ino.

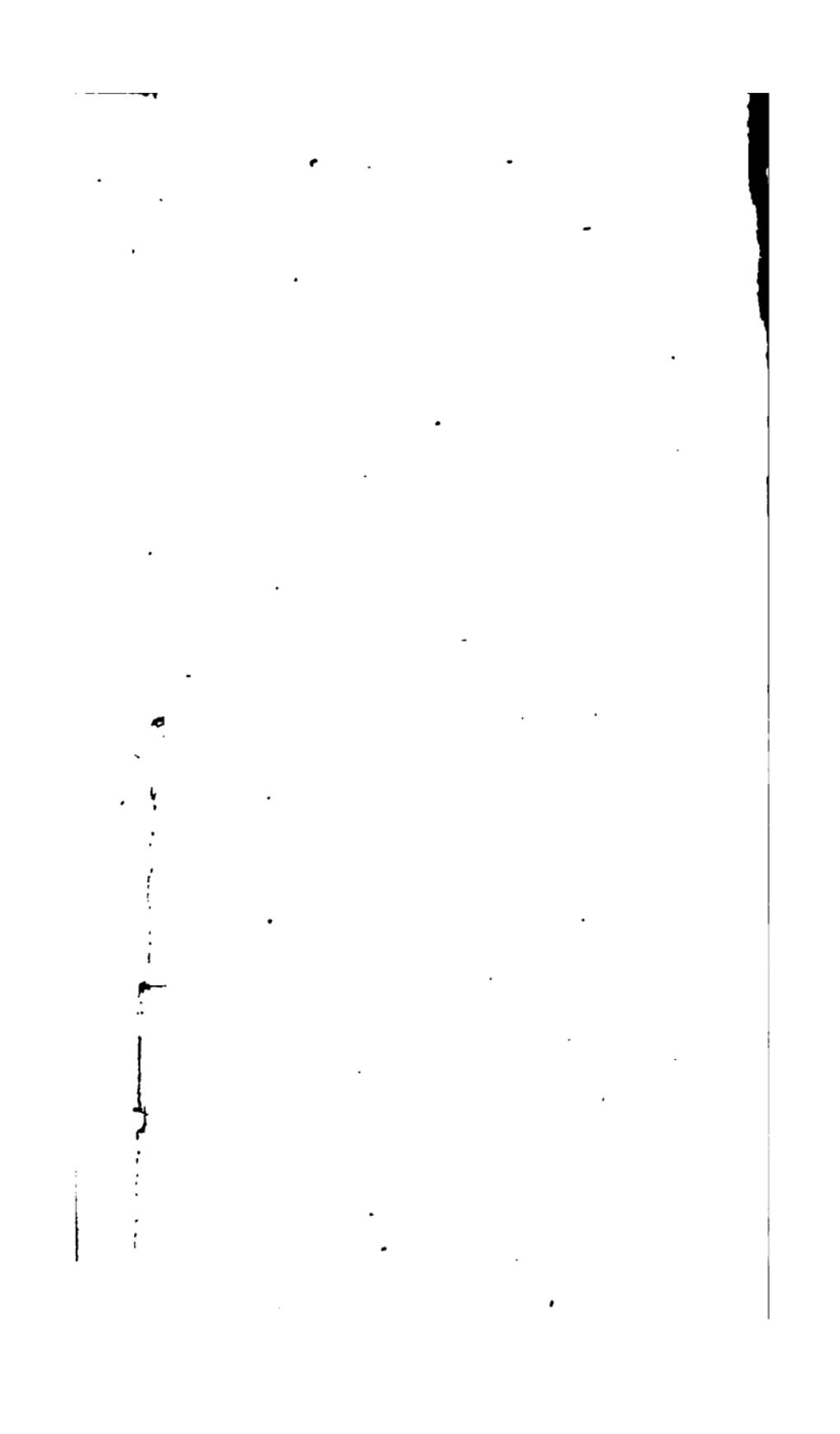
PARTICIPLE PASSIVE, or COM. MON.

10.

I am— are	Sing. <i>áto</i> M <i>áta</i> F Plur. <i>áti</i> M <i>áte</i> F
2 cred— ere	<i>úto</i> M <i>úta</i> F
3 sent— ire	<i>íto</i> M <i>íta</i> F

I am— are	Sing. <i>áto</i> M <i>áta</i> F Plur. <i>áti</i> M <i>áte</i> F
2 cred— ere	<i>úto</i> M <i>úta</i> F
3 sent— ire	<i>íto</i> M <i>íta</i> F

Note. The Terminations of the Verbs in this *Table* are accented, that the Learner may distinguish more readily between the *Grave* and *Acute Accent*; but it is to be ~~passed~~ *not* ~~the~~ *grave* is used on particular Words and Verbs *that Reason, to avoid Trouble, not come*



Concerning the ITALIAN VERBS.

AFTER that the Learner has made himself perfect in the Auxiliary Verbs *Haver* to have, and *Eſſere* to be, before fet down Page 36, he ought to begin to conjugate the *Verbs Regular*, which he will find easy to be performed by the annexed *Table of Verbs*: It may however be necessary to make a few Remarks here, that may be assisting to him in the Formation of the Moods and Tenses.

I. The Verbs of the *Italian* Tongue may be said to consist only of three Conjugations, tho' Grammarians do frequently distinguish between *ére* long, and *ére* short, as in the *Latin*; but as this Distinction forms no Variation of Tenses, it is needless to introduce it into Practice, and the Verbs may be distinguished by the three Terminations, as in the annexed *Table*.

II. The first Person of all Tenses is formed from the Infinitive Mood of Verbs, by dropping the Termination *re*, and changing the penultimate or last Syllable but one, according to the different Tense of the Verb.

III. The Present Tense of the *Italian* Verbs always ends in *O*, as of *amare*, *temere*, *sentire*, are formed *amo*, *temo*, *uento*; In like manner, the first Person of the Plural Number of this Tense, in general ends in *iamo*.

IV. The Imperfect Tense of all Verbs ends in *vo*, first Person Singular, and in *vamo* first Person

Plural ; as *ama-vo*, *teme-vo*, *senti-vo*, Singular ; *ama-vamo*, *crede-vamo*, *senti-vamo*, Plural.

V. The Definite Tense is formed of the Infinitive by changing *re* into *t* ; as of *ama-re*, *teme-re*, *senti-re*, are formed, *ama-i*, *teme-i*, *senti-i* : Note, the second Person singular of Verbs of this Tense, both Regular and Irregular end in *sti*, and the Plural in *sti* ; as *amasti*, *credesti*, *sentisti*, Singular, *amaste*, *credeste*, *sentiste* Plural, and that the third Person Singular is always accented, as *amò*, *temè*, *sentì*. The like Formation of the Tenses of Verbs will be found throughout the different Moods, by observing the Termination of the Infinitive Mood of each Verb Regular, and bringing that to the ending of each Tense set down in the Table of Verbs annexed.

It may be here observed of Verbs, that in general they be pronounced with the Accent on the Penultimate, or last Syllable save one, except in the Future Tense, which has always a grave Accent on the last Syllable of the first and third Person Singular ; as, *amerò* I will love, *amerà* he will love ; the like Accent is also placed on the third Person Singular of the Definite Tense, as is above observed ; as, *amò* he loved, &c. — Let it also be remembered that the Verbs in *Italian*, are most frequently declined, and wrote without the Pronouns Nominative, for which reason they are here not set down, except in the Optative Mood.

A P R A X I S of Verbs Regular, according to the TABLE, in the several CONJUGATIONS.

First CONJUGATION in *are*.

Amare, to love.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. Do.

Sing.	<i>amo</i>	I love, or do love
	<i>ami</i>	thou lovest, or dost love
	<i>ama</i>	he loveth, or does love
Plur.	<i>amiamo</i>	we love
	<i>amate</i>	ye love
	<i>amano</i>	they love.

Imperfect Tense. Did.

Sing.	<i>amape</i>	I did love
	<i>amavi</i>	thou didst love
	<i>amava</i>	he did love
Plur.	<i>amavamo</i>	we did love
	<i>amavate</i>	ye did love
	<i>amavano</i>	they did love.

Definite, or Praeterit Tense. Had.

Sing.	<i>amai</i>	I had loved
	<i>amasti</i>	thou hadst loved
	<i>amo</i>	he had loved

Plur.	amammo	we had loved.
	amaste	ye had loved.
	amárono	they had loved

Future Tense. Shall or will.

Sing.	amerò	I shall or will love
	amerai	thou shalt or wilt love
	amerà	he shall or will love
Plur.	ameremo	we shall or will love
	amerete	ye shall or will love
	ameranno	they shall or will love.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing.	ama	love thou
	ami	let him love
Plur.	amiamo	let us love
	amáte	love ye
	ámino	let them love.

OPTATIVE or SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. May.

Sing.	cb'io ami	that I may love
	che tu ami	that thou mayst love
	cb'egli ami	that he may love
Plur.	che noi amiámo	that we may love
	che voi amiáte	that ye may love
	cb'egli no ámino	that they may love.

Imperfect Tense I. Should, would, &c.

Sing.	ameréi	that I should, &c. love
	amerésti	that thou shouldst, &c. love
	amerébbe	that he should, &c. love

Plur.

Plur.	amerémmo	that we should, &c. love
	ameréste	that ye should, &c. love
	amerébbero	that they should, &c. love.

Imperfect II. Might.

Sing.	ch'io amássse	that I might love
	che tu amássse	that thou mightst love
	ch'egli amássse	that he might love
Plur.	che noi amássimo	that we might love
	che voi amássete	that ye might love
	ch'egliano amássero	that they might love

PARTICIPLE ACTIVE.

Amendo, loving.

PARTICIPLE PASSIVE, or COMMON.

Masc.	Fem.
amato	amata Sing.
amati	amata Plur.

Note, The Gerunds of Verbs are rendered by the Infinitive Mood, with *di*, *nel*, *col*, *a*, *da*, *per*, or other Article before them, See Ch. IV. Rule 16. &c. Gerunds also are sometimes taken in an absolute Sense, as, *avendo a scrivere*, having occasion to write.



C O M.

C O M P O U N D T E N S E S.

THE Compound Tenses of this and other Verbs, are formed as in *English* and *French*, that is, by bringing the Tenses of the Auxiliary Verb *Haver* to have, to the Participle Common of other Verbs, as is before observed in this Grammar, Page 39, and in my *Rules for the French Tongue*. Example,

Present *Hô amato* I have loved, &c.

Imperfect *Havendo amato* I had loved, &c.

Future *Haverò amato* I shall, or will have loved.

And the like, in other Compound Tenses, formed of this Verb *Haver*, and the Participle Passive or Common.

* * * The Verbs in *are*, are all conjugated alike, except four, that is, *andare*, *dare*, *fare*, *stare*, of which hereafter.

Note also, That the Auxiliary Verb *Hô* I have, forms the Compound Tenses of the Active Voice, and *suo Jugo*, with the Participle Common, forms the Passive Voice of Verbs.

Second

Second CONJUGATION in *ere*, both long and short.

Credere, to believe.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. Do.

Sing.	<i>Crédo</i>	I believe, or do believe
	<i>crédi</i>	thou believest, &c.
	<i>créde</i>	he believeth, &c.
Plur.	<i>crédiámo</i>	we believe
	<i>credéte</i>	ye believe
	<i>crédono</i>	they believe.

Imperfect Tense. Did.

Sing.	<i>Credoo</i>	I did believe
	<i>credévi</i>	thou didst believe
	<i>credéva</i>	he did believe
Plur.	<i>credovámo</i>	we did believe
	<i>credováte</i>	ye did believe
	<i>credováno</i>	they did believe.

Definite or Preterit Tense. Had.

Sing.	<i>Credei</i> or <i>credette</i>	I had believed
	<i>credesti</i>	thou hadst believed
	<i>cr. dè</i> or <i>credette</i>	he had believed
Plur.	<i>credemmo</i>	we had believed
	<i>credesse</i>	ye had believed
	<i>crederono</i> , or, <i>credettero</i>	they had believed.

Future

Future Tense. Shall or will.

Sing.	<i>Credérò</i>	I shall or will believe
	<i>crederai</i>	thou shalt or wilt believe
	<i>crederà</i>	he shall or will believe
Plur.	<i>crederémo</i>	we shall or will believe
	<i>crederéte</i>	ye shall or will believe
	<i>crederánno</i>	they shall or will believe.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing.	<i>Credi</i>	believe thou
	<i>creda</i>	let him believe
Plur.	<i>crediamo</i>	let us believe
	<i>credéte</i>	believe ye
	<i>crédano</i>	let them believe.

OPTATIVE or SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. May.

Sing.	<i>Ch'io creda</i>	that I may believe
	<i>che tu creda</i>	thou may'st believe
	<i>ch'egli creda</i>	he may believe
Plur.	<i>che noi crediamo</i>	we may believe
	<i>che voi crediate</i>	you may believe
	<i>ch'ogliano credano</i>	they may believe.

Imperfect I. Should, would.

Sing.	<i>Crederti</i>	I should believe
	<i>crederifsti</i>	thou shouldst believe
	<i>crederébbe, or,</i>	he should believe
	<i>crederia</i>	
Plur.	<i>crederémmo</i>	we should believe
	<i>crederéste</i>	you should believe
	<i>crederébbero, or,</i>	they should believe.
	<i>crederianio.</i>	

Imperfect

Imperfect II. Might, &c.

Sing.	<i>Credéssi</i>	that I might believe
	<i>credéssi</i>	thou might'st believe
	<i>credésse</i>	he might believe
Plur.	<i>credéssimo</i>	we might believe
	<i>credéssse</i>	you might believe
	<i>credéssero</i>	they might believe.

PARTICIPLE ACTIVE.

Credendo, believing.

PARTICIPLE PASSIVE, or COMMON.

Mas.	Rem.
<i>Creduto</i>	<i>Creduta</i>
<i>Crediti</i>	<i>Credute</i>

Sing. }
Plur. } believed.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Present *Ho creduto* I have believed, &c.
 Imperfect *avevo creduto* I had believed, &c.
 Future *avrò creduto* I shall have believed.
 And the like in other Compound Tenses.

Third CONJUGATION in *ire*.*Sentire*, to hear.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. Do.

Sing.	<i>Sento</i>	I hear, or do hear
	<i>senti</i>	thou hearest
	<i>sente</i>	he hears
		Plur.

Plur.	<i>sentíamo</i>	we hear
	<i>sentíste</i>	ye hear
	<i>sentírono</i>	they hear.

Imperfect Tense. Did.

Sing.	<i>sentíve</i>	I did hear
	<i>sentívi</i>	thou didst hear
	<i>sentíva</i>	he did hear
Plur.	<i>sentívamo</i>	we did hear
	<i>sentívate</i>	ye did hear
	<i>sentívano</i>	they did hear

Definite or Preterit Tense. Had.

Sing.	<i>sentíi</i>	I heard, or had heard
	<i>sentísti</i>	thou heardst
	<i>sentí</i>	he heard
Plur.	<i>sentímmo</i>	we heard
	<i>sentíste</i>	ye heard
	<i>sentírono</i>	they heard.

Future Tense. Shall or will.

Sing.	<i>sentirò</i>	I shall or will hear
	<i>sentirai</i>	thou shalt or will hear
	<i>sentirà</i>	he shall or will hear
Plur.	<i>sentirémo</i>	we shall or will hear
	<i>sentirete</i>	ye shall or will hear
	<i>sentiranno</i>	they shall or will hear.

IMPERATIVE Mood.

Sing.	<i>Senti</i>	hear thou
	<i>senta</i>	let him hear
Plur.	<i>sentiamo</i>	let us hear
	<i>sentite</i>	hear ye
	<i>sentano</i>	let them hear.

OPTATIVE or SUBJUNCTIVE Mood.

Present Tense. May, or can.

Sing..	<i>Che'lo senta</i>	that I may hear
	<i>che tu senta, ti</i>	that thou mayst hear
	<i>cb'egli senta</i>	that he may hear
Plur.	<i>che noi sentiamo</i>	that we may hear
	<i>che voi sentiate</i>	that ye may hear
	<i>cb'egli sentano</i>	that they may hear.

Imperfect I. Should, would, &c.

Sing.	<i>Sentirei</i>	I should, &c. hear
	<i>sentiresti</i>	thou shouldst hear
	<i>sentirebbe</i>	He should hear
Plur.	<i>sentiremmo</i>	we should hear
	<i>sentireste</i>	ye should hear
	<i>sentirebbero</i>	they should hear

Imperfect II. Might, &c.

Sing.	<i>Che sentissi</i>	that I might hear
	<i>che sentissi</i>	thou might'st hear
	<i>che sentisse</i>	he might hear

S

Plur.

Plur.	<i>che sentissimo</i>	we might hear
	<i>che sentisse</i>	you might hear
	<i>che sentissero</i>	they might hear.

PARTICIPLE ACTIVE.

Sentendo, hearing.

PARTICIPLE PASSIVE, or COMMON.

Masc.	Fem.
<i>Sentito</i>	<i>Sentita</i>
<i>Sentiti</i>	<i>Sentite</i>

Sing.

Plur.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Present	<i>Ho sentito</i>	I have heard
Imperfect	<i>havévo sentito</i>	I had heard
Future	<i>baverò sentito</i>	I shall have heard.

And the like in other Compound Tenses.

Of VERBS PASSIVE, RECIPROCAL,
and NEUTER.

THE Verb *Passive* is formed as in *English* and *French*, by the addition of the Auxiliary Verb *Sono* I am, in all its Moods and Tenses to the *Participle Active*, or *Common*, as will appear from the following Example,

Effere amato, to be loved.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Sono amato</i>	I am loved
	<i>sei amato</i>	thou art loved
	<i>è amato</i>	he is loved

Plur.

Plur.	<i>fiamo amati</i>	we are loved.
	<i>fete, or siete amati</i>	ye are loved
	<i>sono amati</i>	they are loved.

Imperfect Tense,

Sing.	<i>Ero amato</i>	I was loved
	<i>eri amato</i>	thou wast loved
	<i>era amato</i>	he was loved
Plur.	<i>erâmo amati</i>	we were loved
	<i>erâte amati</i>	ye were loved
	<i>erâno amati</i>	they were loved.

And the like throughout the several Moods and Tenses: See Page 42. And here Note, that the *Participle* changes its Number and Gender as the Noun it agrees with, or the occasion requires, and frequently agrees with the Noun that follows; Example,

Having seen a Woman, *avendo veduta una donna.*

He has said very fine things, *egli ha dette bellissime cose.*

VERBS *Reciprocal* take the Pronouns *mi* myself, *ti* thyself, *si* himself, herself, *ci* ourselves, *vi* yourselves, *si* themselves, before them only, as the *Italians* seldom make use of the Pronouns *Nominative* in conjugating their Verbs; I shall set down an Example.

<i>mi levo</i>	I rise
<i>ti levi</i>	thou dost rise
<i>si leva</i>	he rises
<i>cileviamo</i>	we rise

<i>vi levete</i>	<i>ye rise</i>
<i>si levano</i>	<i>they rise</i>
<i>mi son levato</i>	<i>I am risen, &c.</i>

VERBS Neuter are those Verbs that in the Compound Tenses, are conjugated by the Auxiliary *avére*; as *hò parlato*, *hanno tremato*, and never by the Auxiliary *essere*. And Note the Participle always ends in *o*, be it either Singular or Plural Number, Masculine or Feminine; as, the Queen has supped, *la Regina hâ cenato*, your Friends have slept, *i vostri amici hanno dormitto*.

Of VERBS IRREGULAR.

THE Formation of the Irregular Verbs in Italian does greatly vary, by reason of the liberty taken by Authors, both in Prose and Poetry; for this cause I shall set down in an Alphabetical List, the several Tenses of these Verbs, according to the different Conjugations; and the Learner will observe, that altho' the formation of Tenses is from the Infinitive Mood of Verbs, there are frequent variations from this Rule.

I. *Tenere* to keep, *Venire* to come, take the addition of a *g*, and make *tengo*, *vengo*, and in order to soften the sound, the *g* is also transposed and forms *vugno*, *tegno*; *dovere* to owe, makes *devo*.

II. The letter *l* in Verbs, takes *g* before *o*; as *dolere* to grieve forms *dolgo*, and sometimes an *i* is assumed to soften the sound, and makes *dolgio*; *volere*, to be able, makes *vaglie*, *volere* to be willing, *vuglio*.

III. The letter *r* in the penultima of the Infinitive Mood, is frequently changed into *i*; as of *parere* to seem, comes *paio*; of *morire* to die *moio*, and sometime *muoro*.

IV. The letter *c* of the same penultima is doubled, and makes *ci*; as *piacere* to please, makes *piaccio*, &c.

V. Those that understand the *Latin Tongue* will find great ease in forming and conjugating the *Verbs Irregular* by giving attention particularly to the Definite Tense and the Participle; as for Example, when the *Præterit* or Definite Tense of the *Latin* is with an *x*, it is in *Italian* changed into double *ss*, as *dixi, dissi*; if there be two different Consonants, the first is rendered the same as the last, as *scripsi, scrisse*: And the like attention will point out also the Participle; as of *scriptum* is *scritto*; *factum, fatta*; *lettum, letto*: But not to dwell longer on these Particulars, the different formation of *Verbs Irregular* will be best learnt by a due attention to the *Verbs themselves*, as set down in the following List.

Note, the small Figures before the Tenses of these Verbs following, referr to the like Tenses in the *General Table of Verbs*.



VERBS *Irregular*

of the First CONJUGATION in *are, are* four.

I. *Andare, to go.*1. *Vado, vò**yai**va**andiamo**andate**vanno*2. *Andavo**andávi**andava**andavamo**andavate**andavano*3. *Andai**andasti**andò**andammo**andaste**andárono.*4. *Anderò, andrò**anderai**andrà**anderemo**anderete**anderanno*5. *Và**vada, vadi**andiamo**andate**vadano, vadino*6. *Vada, vadi**vada, vadi**vada, vadi**andiamo**andiate**vadano, vadino*7. *Anderei, andrei**andereste, andreste**anderebbe, andrebbe**anderemmo, andremmo**andreste, andreste**anderebbero, andrebbero*

8.

8.	andaffero	9.
Andaffi	Andando.	
andaffi		10.
andaffe		
andaffimo	Andato, ta	
andafte	andati, te	

N. B. In this Verb, for *andare*, *andate*, *andava*, and *andato*, it will be found that the Poets use, *gire*, *gite*, *giva*, *gito*, of which Verb hereafter.

II. Fare, to do.

1.	Fò,	farà
	fai	faremo
	fa	farete
	facciamo	faranno.
2.	Facévo	Fà
	facévi	faccia
	facéva	facciamo
	facévamo	fate
	facevate	facciano, faccino
	facévano	
3.	Feci, fei	Faccia
	facefti, festi	faccia
	fece, fe	faccia
	facemmo	facciamo
	faceste	facciate
	fecero	facciano.
4.	Farò	Farei
	farai	farefti
		farebbe
		faremmo
		farefte
		farebbero

8.

Facessi
facessi
facesse
facessimo
faceste
faceffero.

Darò
darai
darà
daremo
darete
daranno.

4.

Facendo.

9.

Dà
dia
diamo
date
diano.

5.

Fatto, ta
Fatti, te.

10.

III. Darc, *to give.*

Dò
dai
dà
diamo
date
danno

2.

Davo
davi
dava
davamo
davate
davano

3.

Diedi, detti
defti
diede, dette, diè
demmo
deste,
dièdero, dettero

Dia
dia, dii
dia
diamo
diate
diano, diino

6.

Darei
daresti
darebbe
daremmo
dareste
darebbero.

7.

Dessi
deffi
desse
deffimo
deste, desf
deffero, deffino.

8.

Dando.

9.

16.

Datto, ta
datti, te.V. Stare, *to be, to
stand, &c.*

1.

Stò,
stai
stà
stiammo
state
stanno.

2.

Stavo
stavi
stava
stavamo
stavate
stavano.

3.

Stetti
stesti
stette
stemmo
stete
stettero.

4.

Starò
starai
starà
staremostarete
staremo.

5.

Stà
stia
stiamo
state
stiano, stiino

6.

Stia
stia, stii
stia
stiamo
stiamo
stiano, stiino

7.

Starei
staresti
starebbe
staremmo
stareste
starebbero.

8.

Stessi
stessi
stesse
stessimo
stesse
stessero

9.

Stando.
Stato, stata
stati, state.

10.

Irregul.

Irregular V E R B S
of the Second CONJUGATION in *Ere*.*

I. Ardere, to burn.

	1.	
Ardo, ardi, arde		arderà
ardiamo		arderemo
ardete		arderete
ardono.		arderono.
	2.	
Ardevo		Ardi
ardevi		arda
ardeva		ardiamo
ardevamo		ardete
ardevate		ardano.
	3.	
Arfi		Arda
ardesti		arda
arfe		arda
ardemmo		ardiamo
ardeste		ardiate
arfero		ardano.
	4.	
Arderò		Arderei
arderai		arderesti
		arderebbe
		arderemmo
		ardereste
		arderebbero.
	5.	
	6.	
	7.	
	8.	

* Verba in *ere* are both long and short in the Infinitive Mood; but as is observed in Page 185. no difference is made thereby in forming their Tenses: Those that have *ere* long are only twenty-two, and will be marked *ere*, the rest are short.

8.
Ardeffi
ardeffi
ardesse
ardeffimo
ardeste
ardeffero

9.
Ardendo.

10.
Arso, fa,
arsi, se

II. Cadére, *to fall.*

1.
Cado, caggio,
cadi
cade
caddiamo, caggiamo
cadete
cadono, caggiono.

2.
Cadevo, vi, va.
cadevamo, ate, ano

3.
Caddi, cadei, cadetti
cadetti
cadde, cade, cadette
cademmo
cadeste
caddero, caderono, ca-
dettero, caddano.

4.
Caderò, rai, rà
caderemo, rete, rono.

5.
Cadi
cada, caggia
cadiamo,
cadéte
cadano
Cada, ca 6.
cada, ca ggia
cada, c ggia
aggia
cadiamo
cadiate
cadano.

7.
Caderei
caderesti
caderebbe
caderemmo
cadereste
caderebbero.

8.
Cadéffi, si, se
cadefimo
cadeste
cadessero.

9.
Cadendo.

10.
Caduto, ta
caduta, te.

III. Cuócere, *to boil.*

1.
Cuoco, ci, ce
cuociamo

cuociamo	9.	Cuoceffi, si, se
cuocete, cocete		cuoceffimo
cucono, cucciano.		cuocete
	2.	cuoceffero
Cuocevo, vi, va	9.	Cuocendo, cocente
cuoceviamo		
cuoceviate	10.	
cuocevano		
	3.	Cotto, ta
Coffi		cotti, te
cuocesti, cocesti		
cosse		
cuocemmo, cocemmo	IV.	IV. Concedere, to
cuocete, coeste:		agre.
coffero.		
	4.	Concedo, di, de
Cuocerò, rai, rà		concediamo
cuoceremo, rete, ranno.		concedete
	5.	concedonio
Cuoci	2.	
cuoca		Concedevo, vi, va
cuociamo		concedevamo, vate, vano
cuocete		
cuocano.	3.	Conceffi, concedei, detti
		concedefsti
		concesse
		concedemmo
		concedeste
		concedero, concessero
	6.	
Cuoca, ca, ca	4.	Concederò, rai, rà
cuociamo, ate, ano.		Concederemo, rete, ranno
	7.	
Cuocerei	5.	Concedi
cuoceresti		conceda
cuocerebbe		
cuoceremmo		concedamo
cuocereste		
cuocerebbero		

concediamo.

concedete.

concedano.

6.

Conceda, da, da

concediamo

concediate

concedano.

7.

Concederei

concederesti

concederebbe

concederemmo

concedereste

concederebbero

8.

Concedessi, i, e

concedessimo

concedeste

concedessero.

9.

Concedendo.

10.

Concessi, ia

concessi, se.

*In like manner,
Succeedere, to succeed.*V. Conducere, con-
durre, to conduct.

1. Conduco, ci, ee

conduciamo

conducete

conducono.

2. Conducevo, vi, va
conducevamo, ate, and.

3.

Condussi
conducesti
conduisse
conducemmo
conduceste
conduissero.

4.

Condurrò, rai, rà
condurremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Conduci
conduca
conduciamo
conducete
conducano

6.

Conduca, a, a
conduciamo
conduciate
conducano.

7.

Condurrei
condurresti
condurrebbe
condurremmo
condurreste
condurrebbero

8.

Conducessi, i, e
conducessimo
conduceste
conducessero.

Γ

9.

9.	Conducendo	chiuderebbe
10.	Condotto, ta condotti, te.	chiuderemmo
		chiudereste
		chiuderebbero.
		8.
	Chiudessi, i, e	Chiudessi, i, e
	chiudessimmo	chiudessimmo
	chiudesteste	chiudesteste
	chiudessero.	chiudessero.
		9.
	Chiudendo.	Chiudendo.
		10.
	Chiuso, sa	Chiuso, sa
	chiusi, se.	chiusi, se.
	<i>In like manner its com- pound</i>	
	Conchiudere, to conclude.	
1.	VII. Cogliere, to gather.	VII. Cogliere, to gather.
	Coglio, colgo	Coglio, colgo
	cogli	cogli
	coglie	coglie
	cogliamo	cogliamo
	cogliete	cogliete
	coglioni, colgono.	coglioni, colgono.
2.	Coglievo, vi, va	Coglievo, vi, va
	coglievamo, vate, vano.	coglievamo, vate, vano.
3.	Colsi	Colsi
	cogliesti	cogliesti
	colse	colse
	cogliemmo	cogliemmo
		colgliesti

colglieste
colsero.

4.

coglierò, corrò
coglierai, rà
coglieremo, rete, ranno.

5.

cogli,
coglia, colga
cogliamo
cogliete
cogliano.

6.

Coglia, colga
coglia, a
cogliamo
cogliate
cogliano.

7.

Coglierei
coglieresti
coglierebbe
coglieremmo
coglireste
coglierebbero

8.

Cogliessi, i, e
cogliessimo
coglieste
cogliessero.

9.

Cogliendo.

10.

Colto, ta.
colti, te.

*In like manner its com-
pounds*

Accogliere, *to gather*
Togliere, *to take away*
Sciogliere, *to loose*
Distogliere, *to remove.*

**VIII. Correre, to
run.**

1.

Corro, i, e
corriamo
correte
corrono.

2.

Correvo, vi, va
correvamo, ate, ano.

3.

Corsi
corresti
corse
corremmo
coreste
corsero.

4.

Correrò, rai, rà
correremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Corri, a
corriamo
correte
corrano

6.

Corra, a, a
corriamo

T 2

corriate

corriate
corrano.

7.

Correai
correresti
correrrebbe
correremmo
correreste
correbbero.

8.

Corressi, si, se
corressimo
correste
corressero.

9.

Correndo.

10.

Corso, sa
corsi, se.

In like manner, its compounds
Accorrere, to run unto
Concorrere, to run together.

IX. Conoscere, to know.

1.

Conosco, ci, ce
conosciamo, cete, cono

2.

Conoscevo, vi, va
conoscevamo, vate, vono

3.

Conobbi

conoscesti
conobbe
conoscemmo
conosceste
conobbero.

4.

Conoscerò, rai, rà
conosceremo, rete, ramo.

5.

Conosci, e, a
conosciamo
conoscete
conoscano.

6.

Conosca, a, a
conosciamo
conosciate
conoscano.

7.

Conoscerei
conosceresti
conoscerebbe
conosceremmo
conoscereste
conoscerebbero.

8.

Conoscessi, si, se
conoscessimo
conoscessete
conoscessero.

9.

Conoscendo.

10.

Conosciuto, ta
conosciuti, te.

X.

X. Crescere, *to grow.*

1.

Cresco, ci, ce
cresciamo
crescete
crescono

2.

Crescevo, vi, va
crescevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Crebbi
crescessi
crebbe
crescemmo
cresceste
crebbero.

4.

Crescerò, rai, rà
cresceremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Cresci, ca
cresciamo.
crescete
crescano.

6.

Cresca, a, a
cresciamo
cresciate
crescano.

7.

Crescerei
crescereste
crescerebbe
cresceremmo

crescereste
crescerebbero.

8.

Crescessi, si, se
crescessimo
cresceceste
cresceffero.

9.

Crescendo.
Cresciuto, ta
cresciuti, te.

XI. Cingere, *cig-
nere, to gird.*

1.

Cingo, gi, ge
cingiamo
cingete
cingono.

2.

Cingevo, vi, va
cingevamo, vate, vano

3.

Cinfì
cingesti
cinfé
cingemmo
cingeste
cinfero.

4.

Cingerò, rai, rà
cingeremo, rete, ranno.

T 3.

5.

Cingi, ga	5.	dobbiamo
cingiamo		dovete
cingate		debbono, devono, deo-
cingano.		no.
	6.	2.
Cinga, a, a		Dovevo, vi, va
cingiamo		dovevamo, vatè, vano
cingiate		
cingano.		
	7.	3.
Cingerei		Dovei, dovetti
cingeresti		dovestì
cingerebbe		dovette, dove
tingeremmo.		dovemmo
cingereste		doveste
cingerebbero.		dovettero, doverno.
	8.	4.
Cingessi, i, e.		Doverò, dovrà
cingessimo		doverai
cingeste		doverà
cingessero.		doveremo, fete, ramo.
	9.	5.
Cingendo.		Devi
	10.	debbà
Cinto, ta		dobbiamo
cinti, te.		dobbiate
<i>In like manner,</i>		dobbano.
Spingere, to thirst.		
<hr/>		
XII. Dovere, to owe.		6.
	1.	Debba, a, a
Devo, debbo, deggio		dobbiamo
devi, debbi		dobbiate
deve, debbe, de		dobbano.
	7.	
		Doverei
		doverestì
		doverebbe
		doveremmo
		dovereste

dovereste
dovettebbero

8.

Doveffi

doveffi

doveffe

doveffimo

doveste

doveffeso.

9.

Dovendo.

10.

Dovato, a

dovuti, e

XIII. Doléne, to *ach.*Dolérsi, to *complain.**A Verb Reciprocal.*

Mi doglie, dolgo
ti duoli
si duole
ci dogliamo
vi dolete
si dogliono, dolgono.

2.

Mi dolevo, vi, va
ti dolevamo
vi dolevate
si dolevano.

3.

Mi dolesi, dolei
ti dolesti
si dolse

ci dolemmo
vi doleste
si dolsero.

4.

Mi dorrò, dolorò
ti dorrà
si dorrà
ci dorremo
vi dorrete
si dorranno

5.

Duoliti
dolgati, dogliati
dogliamoci
doletevi
dolganosi, doglianosi

6.

Mi dolga, doglia, a,
ci dogliamo
vi dogliate
si dolgano.

7.

Mi dorrei
ti doresti
si dorrebbe
ci dorremmo
vi dorreste
si dorrebbero.

8.

Mi dolessi
ti dolessi
si dolesse
ci dolessimo
vi dolesté
si dolessero.

9.

9.
Dolendosi.

10.

**Doluto, ta
doluti, e.***In like manner its Camp-
pounds***Condolere, to condole
Ridolere, to grieve.*****XIV. Distinguere,
to distinguish.**1.
**Distinguo, gui, gue
distinguiamo, ate, ono**

2.

**Distinguevo, vi, va
distinguevamo, vate, va-
no.**

3.

**Distingui
distinguesti
distingue
distinguemmo
distingueste
distinguero.**4.
**Distinguerò, rai, rà
distingueremo
distinguerete**
distinguieranno.5.
**Distingui, a
distinguiamo, ate, ano.**6.
**Distingua, a, a
distinguiamo, ate, ano.**7.
**Distinguerai
distingueresti
distinguerebbe
distinguemmo
distinguereste
distinguerebbero.**8.
**Distingueressi, esti, est
distingueſſimo
distingueſſe
distingueſſero.**9.
Distinguendo.

10.

* Note, I. All Verbs Reciprocal are conjugated with the Pronouns Personal, as pentersi, to repent; ricordarsi, to remember, &c.

II. Dolere, also is a Verb Imperf. in the third Person Singular only, as, he has the Head-ach, gli duole la testa; they have the Head-ach, duoleloro la testa.

10.
Difinito, ta
distinti, te.

In like manner,
Eistinguere, to put out.

**XV. Diffendere, to
defend.**

1.
Diffendo, i, e.
diffendiamo
diffendete
diffendono.

2.
Diffendevo, vi, va.
diffendevamo, vate, va-
no.

3.
Difesi, i
diffendesti
difeſe.
difendemmo, eſte
difeſero.

4.
Difenderò, rái, rá
difenderemo, rete, ran-
no.

5.
Difendi, da
difendiamo, eſte, ano.

6.
Difenda, da, da
difendiamo, ate, ano.

7.
Difenderei

difendereſte
difenderebbe
difenderemmo
difendereſte
difenderebbero.

8.

Difendeffi, i, e
difendeffimo
difendeste
difendeffero.

9.

Difendendo.

10.

Difeſo, a
difeſi, e

In like manner,
Decidere, to decide.

XVI. Ergere, to

draw, exert or bind

1.

Ergo, gi, ge
ergiamo, ete, ono

2.

Ergevo, vi, va
ergevamo, vate, vano

3.

Erfi
ergeſte
erſe
ergemmo
ergeſte
erſero.

4.

4.
Ergerò, rai, rà
ergeremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Ergi, ga

ergiamo

ergete, ano.

6.

Erga, a, a

ergiamo

ergiate

ergano.

7.

Ergerei

ergeresti

ergerebbe

ergeremmo

ergereste

ergerebbero.

8.

Ergessi, i, e

ergessimo

ergeste

ergeggero.

9.

Ergendo.

10.

Erto, a

erti, e.

In like manner,
Eriggere, to erect.

XVII. **Fondere, to melt.**

1.
Fondi, di, de
fondiamo
fondete
fondono.

2.
Fondevo, vi, va
fondevamo, vate, vano.

3.
Fusi
fondesti
fuse
fondemmo
fondeste
fusero.

4.
Fonderò, rai, rà
fonderemo, rete, ranno.

5.
Fondi, da
fondiamo, ate, ano.

6.
Fonda, da, da
fondiamo, ate, ano.

7.
Fonderei, ereste, errebbe
fonderemmo, ereste, eb-
bero.

8.

The Verbs Essere, and Avére, are not here set down.
See Page 36.

8.

Fondefsi, si, se
fondefsimo, este, essero.

9.

Fondendo.

10.

Fuso, fonduto, a
fusi, fondui, e.

In like manner its compound
Confondere, to confound.

XVIII. Giacére, to lye down.

1.

Giaccio,
giaci
giace
giacciamo
giacete
giacciono.

2.

Giacevo, vi, va
giacevamo, vate, vano.

3.

giacqui
giacesti
giache, giacque
giacemmo
giacete
giacquero.

4.

Giacerò, rai, rà

giaceremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Giacei
giaccia
giacciamo
giaccete
giacciano.

6.

Giaccia, a, a
giacciamo
giacciate
giacciano.

7.

Giacerei
giaceresti
giacerebbe
giaceremmo
giacereste
giacerebbero.

8.

Giacessi, si, se
giacessimo
giaceste
giaceffero.

9.

Giacendo.

10.

Giacciuto, a
giacciuti, e.

XIX. Godére, to rejoice.

1.

Godò, di, de,
Godiamo, dete, dono

2.

2.
Godevo, vi, va
godevamo, vate, vane

3.
Godei, godetti
godesti
godette
godemmo
godeste
godettero.

4.
Goderò, rai, rà
goderemo, reté, ranno.

5.
Godi, da
godiamo
godete
godano.

6.
Goda, a, a
godiamo
godiate
godano.

7.
Goderei
goderesti
goderebbe
goderemmo
godereste
goderebbemmo

8.
Godessi, si, se
godessimo, este, essero.

9.
Godendo.

10.
Goduto, a
gòduti, è

XX. Giúngere, to
join.

1.
Giungo, gi, ge
giungiamo, ate, ono

2.
Giungevo, vi, va
giungivamo, ate, ano.

3.
Giungi
giungesti
giunse
giungemmo
giungeste
giunsero.

4.
Giungerò, rai, rà
giungeremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Giungi, ga
giungiamo
giungéte
giungano.

6.
Giunga, ga, ga
giungiamo, ate, an.

7.
Giungerei
giungeresti
giungerebbe
giungeremmo, este, essero.

XX.

XX. Muovere, *to move.*

1.
Muovo, vi, ve
muoviamo, vete, vono

2.
Muovevo, vi, va
muovevamo, ate, ano.

3.
Moffi

muovesti

mosse

muovemmo

muoveste

mossero.

4.

Muoverò, rai, rà
muoveremo, rete, ran-
no.

5.

muovi, va
muoviamo, vete, ano

6.

Muova, a, a
muoviamo, viate, vano

7.

Muoverei, resti, errebbe
muoveremmo, reste, rebbero.

8.

Muovessi, ssi, sse
muovessimo, ste, ssero.

9.

Muovendo.

10.

Moffo, fa
moffi, se.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds.*

Amovere
commovere
rimovere.

XXI. Mettere, *to put.*

1.

Metto, i, e
mettiamo, tete, tono.

2.

Mettevo, vi, va
mettavamo, vate, vano.

3.

Misi

mettesti

misie

mettemmo

metteste

misero.

4.

Metterò, rai, rà
metteremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Metti, ta
mettiamo
met.ete
mettano.

U

6.

	6.	nascete, cono.
Metta, a, a mettiamo, tiate, tano.	7.	2. Nascevo, vi, va nascevamo, vate, vano.
Metterei metteresti metterebbe metteremmo mettereste metterebbero.	8.	3. Nacqui nascesti nacque nascevammo nasceste nacquero.
Metteffi, si, se mettessimo metteste mettessero.	9.	4. Nascerò, rai, rà nasceremo, rete, ranno.
Mettendo.	10.	5. Nasci, ca nasciamo nascete nascano.
Messo, a messi, e		6. Nasca, a, a nasciamo, ciate, cano.
<i>In like manner, its compounds</i>		7. Nascerei, resti, rebbe nasceremmo, reste, reb- bero.
Admettere, to admit promettere, to promise rimettere, to remit commettere, to commit sottomettere, to submit, &c.		8. Nascessi, si, se nascessimo, este, essero.
<hr/>		9. Nascendo.
Nasco, i, e nasciamo	1.	10. Nato, a nati, e.

**XXII. Nascere, to
be born.**

XXIII.

XXIII. Nascondere, ascondere, *to hide.*

1.

Nascondo, di, de
nascondiamo
nascondete
nascondono.

2.

Nascondevo, vi, va
nascondevamo
nascondevate
nascondevano.

3.

Nascofi
nascondesti
nascose
nascondemmo
nascondeste
nascosero.

4.

Nasconderò, rai, rà
nasconderemo.
nasconderete
nasconderanno.

5.

Nascondi, da
nascondiamo
nascondete
nascondano.

6.

Nasconda, da, da
nascondiamo
nascondiate
nascondano.

7.

Nasconderei
nasconderesti
nasconderebbe
nasconderemmo
nascondereste
nasconderebbero.

8.

Nascondeffi, si, se
nascondeffimo
nascondeste
nascondeffero.

9.

Nascondendo.

10.

Nascosto, a
nascosti, e.

Nuocere, *to hurt.*

1.

Nuoccio, nuoco
nuoci
nuoce
nuociamo
nuocete
nuocono.

2.

Nuocevo, vi, va
nuocevamo, vate vano.

3.

Nocqui
nuocesti
nocque
nuocemmo

U 2

nuoceste

nuoceste
nuoceremo

4.

Nuocerò, rai, rà
nuoceremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Nuoci
nuoccia
nuociamo
nuocete
nuocciano.

6.

Nuoccia, cia, cia
nuocciamo
nuocciate
nuocciano.

7.

Nuocerei
nuoceresti
nuocerebbe
nuoceremmo
nuocereste
nuocerebbero.

8.

Nuoceffi, si, se
nuoceffimo
nuoceste
nuoceffero.

9.

Nuocendo.

10.

Nuocciuto, ta
nuocciuti, te.

**XXV. Parére, to ap.
pear.**

1.

Paio
pari
pare
pariamo
parete
paiono.

2.

Parevo, vi, va
parevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Parvi
paresti
parve
paremmo
pareste.
parvero.

4.

Parerò, parò
parerai
parerà
pareremo
parerete
pareranno, parrano.

5.

Pari, ra
pariamo
parete
paiano.

6.

paia, a, a
pariamo
pariate
paiano

7.

7.
 parrei
 parresti
 parrebbe
 parremmo
 parreste
 parrebbero.

8.
 paressi, si, se
 paressimo
 pareste
 paressero.

9.
 Parendo.

10.
 Parso, sa
 parsi, se.

In like manner, its compounds

Comparere, to compare
 Apparere, to appear, &c.

XXVI. Persuadere, to persuade.

1.
 Persuado, di, de
 persuadiamo
 persuadete
 persuadono.

2.
 persuadevo, vi, va
 persuadevamo, vate, va-
 no.

3.
 Persuasi
 persuadesti
 persuase
 persuademmo
 persuadeste
 persuasero.

4.
 Persuaderò, rai, rà
 persuaderemo, rete, ran-
 no.

5.
 Persuadi, da
 persuadiamo
 persuadete
 persuadano.

6.
 persuada, da, da
 persuadiamo
 persuadiate
 persuadano.

7.
 persuaderei
 persuaderesti
 persuaderebbe
 persuaderemmo
 persuadereste
 persuaderebbero.

8.
 Persuadessi, si, se
 persuadessimo
 persuadeste
 persuadessero.

9.
 Persuadendo.

10.
Persuaso, fa
persuasi, se.

**XXVII. Percuotere,
to strike.**

1.
Percuoto, ti, te
percutiamo
percutete
percuotono.

2.
Percuotevo, vi, va
percuotevamo, vate, va-
no.

3.
Percosfi
percuotesti
percosse
percuotemmo
percuoteste
percossero.

4.
Percuoterò, rai, rà
percuoteremo, rete, ran-
no.

5.
Percuoti, ta
percuotiamo
percuotete
percuotano

6.
Percuota, ta, ta
percuotiamo

percuotiate
percuotano.
7.
Percuoterei
percuoteresti
percuoterebbe
percuoteremmo
percuotereste
percuoterebbero.

8.
Percuotessi, si, se
percuotessimo
percuoteste
percuotessero.

9.
Percuotendo.

10.
Percoffo, fa
percoffi, se.

**XXVIII. Piacere, to
please.**

1.
Piaccio
piaci
piacce
piacciamo
piacete
piacciono.

2.
Piacevo, vi, va
piacevamo, vate, vano.

3.
Piacqui
piacesti

piaque

piacque
piacemmo
piaceste
piacquero.

4.

Piacerò, rai, rà
piaceremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Piacci
piaccia
piacciamo
piacete
piacciano.

6.

Piaccia, cia, cia
piacciamo
piacciate
piacciano.

7.

Piacerei
piaceresti
piacerebbe
piaceremmo
piacereste
piacerebbero.

8.

Piaceffi, si, se
piaceffimo
piaceste
piaceffero.

9.

Piacendo.

10.

Piacciuto, ta
piacciuti, te.

*In like manner its com-
pounds.*

Dispiacére, *to displease*
Compiacére, *to delight.*

**XXIX. Piangere, to
bewail.**

1.

Piango, gi, ge
piangiamo, gete, ono.

2.

Piangevo, vi, va
piangevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Piansi
piangesti
pianse
piangemmo
piangeste
piansero.

4.

Piangerò, rai, rà
piangeremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Piangi, ga.
piangiamo
piangete
piangiano.

6.

Pianga, ga, ga
piangiamo
piangiate
piangiano.

Piangerei

Piangeresi	3.	Potetti, potei
piangeresti		potesti
piangerebbe		potette, potè
piangeremmo		potemmo
piangereste		poteste
piangerebbero.		potettero, poterono.
	8.	
Piangesse, ssi, sse	4.	Potrò, poterò
piangessimo		potrai, rà
piangeste		poteremo, rete, ranno.
piangessero.		
	9.	
Piangendo.		wanting.
	10.	
Pianto, ta	6.	Possa, a, a
pianti, te		possiamo, iate, fano.
	7.	
<i>In like manner its Compound</i>		Poterei, resti, rebbe
<i>Compiangere, to bemoan,</i>		poteremmo, reste, reb-
<i>Also Pingere, to paint.</i>		bero.
	8.	
XXX. Potére, to be able.		Potessi, si, se
		potessimo
		poteste
		potessero.
	9.	
Potendo.		
	10.	
Potuto, ta		
potuti, te.		
	11.	
XXXI. Porrere, por-		
re, to put.		
	12.	
Pongo		
poni		pone

pone
poniamo
ponete
pongano

2.

Ponevo, vi, va
ponevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Posi
ponesti
pose
ponemmo
poneste
posero.

4.

Porrò, rai, rà
porremo, rete, anno.

5.

Poni, ga
poniamo
ponete
pongano.

6.

Ponga, ga, ga
poniamo
poniate
pongano.

7.

Porrei, resti, rebbe
porremmo, reste, rebbe-
ro.

8.

Ponessi, ssi, sse
ponessimo, este, essero.

9.

Ponendo.

10.
Posto, ta
posti, te

*In like manner its com-
pounds*
Riporre, to replace
comporre, to compose
apporre, to object.

XXXII. Prendere, to take.

I.
Prendo, di, de
prendiamo, dete, dono,

2.

prendevò, vi, va
prendevamo, ate, ano.

3.

Presi
prendesti
prese
prendemmo
prendeste
prefero.

4.

Prenderò, rai, rà
prenderemo, rete,
ranno.

5.

Prendi, da
prendiamo, iate, dano.

6.

Prenda, a, a
prendiamo, iate, dano.

7.

7.	Prenderei, resti, rebbe prenderemmo, reste, rebbero.	3.	Rimasi rimanesti rimase rimanemmo rimaneste rimasero.
8.	Prendessi, si, se prendessimo, este, siero.	4.	Rimanerò, rai, rà rimaneremo, rete, anno.
9.	Prendendo.	5.	Rimani rimanga rimaniamo, nete, ngano.
10.	Preso, sa presi, se. <i>In like manner, its compound</i>	6.	Rimanga, a, a rimaniamo, iate, ngano.
	Apprendere, to learn. Riprendere, to reprove Comprendere, to comprehend.	7.	Rimanerei, resti, rebbe rimaneremmo, reste, rebbero.
	<i>Also, the Verbs</i> Rendere, to render Ascendere, to ascend Ridere, to laugh.	8.	rimanessi, si, se. rimanessimo, este, siero.
	<hr/> XXXIII. Rimanere, <i>to stay.</i>	9.	Rimanendo.
1.	Rimango rimani, ne rimaniamo, nete, gono.	10.	Rimaso, sa rimasi, se.
2.	Rimanево, vi, va rimanevamo, ate, ano.		<hr/> XXXIV. Risolvere, <i>to resolve.</i>
		1.	Risolvo, vi, ve risolviamo
			risolvete

risolvete
risolvono.

2.

Risolvevo, vi, va
risolvevamo, ate, ano.

3.

Risolsi, risolvi, vetti
risolveti

risolse, risolve

risolvemmo

risolveste

risolsero, risolvero.

4.

risolverò, rai, rà

risolveremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Resolvi, va

resolviamo

resolvete, vano.

6.

Risolva, a, a

Risolviamo, viate, vano.

7.

Risolverei, resti, rebbe
risolveremmo, resti, reb-
bero.

8.

Risolveffi, ffi, ffi
risolvestimo, veste, ves-
ro.

9.

Risolvendo.

10.

Risoluto, ta
risoluti, te.

In like manner,

Affolvere, to discharge.
dissolvere, to loose.

**XXXV. Rispondere,
to answer.**

1.

Rispondo, di, de.

rispondiamo, dete, dono.

2.

Rispondevo, vi, va.

rispondevamo, ate, ano.

3.

Risposi

rispondetti

rispose

rispondemmo

rispondeste

risposero.

4.

Risponderò, rai, rà

risponderemo, rete, ran-
no.

5.

Rispondi, da

rispondiamo, dete, dono.

6.

Risponda, da, da

rispondiamo, diate, dono

7.

Risponderei, resti, rebbe

risponderemmo, resti,
rebbero.

8.

8.

Rispondeffi, ffi, sse
rispondeffimo, este, sfero.

9.

Rispondendo.

10.

Risposto, a
risposti, te.

**XXXVI. Rodere,
Corrodere, to gnaw.**

1.

Rodo, di, de
Rodiamo, dete, dono.

2.

Rodevo, vi, va
rodevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Rosi
rodesti
rose
rodemmo
rodeste
rosero.

4.

Roderò, rai, rà
roderemo, rete, ranno.

5.

Rodi, da
rodiamo, dete, dano.

6.

Roda, da, da
rodiamo, diate, dano.

7.

Roderei, resti, rebbe
roderemmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.

Rodessi, ffi, sse
rodeffimo, este, sfero.

9.

Rodendo.

10.

Roso, sa
Rosì, se.

**XXXVII. Rompere,
to break.**

1.

Rompo, pi, pe
rompiamo, pete, pono.

2.

Rompevo, vi, va
rompevamo, ate, an-

3.

Ruppi
rompesti
ruppe
rompemmo
rompeste
ruppero.

4.

Romperò, rai, rà
romperemo, rete, ran-
no.

5.

Rompi, pa

rom-

rompiamo, pete, pano	rispondemmo
6.	rispondeste
Rompa, a, a	risposero.
rompiamo, piate, pano.	4.
7.	Risponderò, rai, rà
Romperei, resti, rebbe	risponderemo, rete, ran-
romperemmo, reste,	no.
rebbero.	5.
8.	Rispondi, da
Rompeffi, ffi, sse	rispondiamo, dete, dano.
rompeffimo, este, effero.	6.
9.	Risponda, da, da
Rompendo.	rispondiamo, diate, da-
10.	no.
Rotto, ta	7.
Rotti, te.	Risponderei, resti, reb-
<i>In like manner, its Com-</i>	be
<i>pound</i>	risponderemmo, reste,
Corrompere, to corrupt.	rebbero.
<hr/>	
XXXVIII. Rispon-	8.
dere, to answer.	Rispondeffi, ffi, sse
1.	rispondeffimo, este, effero.
Rispondo, di, de	9.
rispondiamo, dete, dono.	Rispondendo.
2.	10.
Rispondevo, vi, va	Risposto, ta
rispondevamo, ate, ano.	Risposti, te.
3.	<hr/>
Rispossi	XXXIX. Rodere,
rispondesti	to gnaw.
rispose	1.
	Rodo, di, de
	rodiamo, dete, dono.
	X
	8.

	2.	Rodevo, vi, va rodevamo, vate, vano.	XL. Sapere, <i>to know.</i>
	3.	Rosi rodesti rose rodemmo rodeste rofero.	Sò, fai, fà sapiamo, pete, pono.
	4.	Röderò, rai, rà roderamo, rete, ranno.	Sapevo, vi, va sapevamo, vate, vano
	5.	Rodi, da rodiamo, dete, dano.	Seppi sapesti seppe sapemmo sapeste seppero.
	6.	Roda, da, da rodiamo, dete, dano.	Saperò, rai, rà saperemo, rete, ramo.
	7.	Roderei, resti, rebbe roderemmo, reste, reb- bero.	Sappi sappia sappiamo sappete sappiano.
	8.	Rodessi, ssi, sse rodeissimo, este, sfero.	Sappia, a, a sappiamo sappiate sappiano.
	9.	Rodendo.	
	10.	Roso, sa Rosì, se.	Saperei, resti, rebbe sapperemmo, reste, reb- bero.

8.
Sapeffi, ffi, fse
sapessimo, este, essero.
 9.

Sapendo.

10.
Saputo, ta,
saputi, te.

X

XLI. Scrivere, to write.

1.
Scrivo, vi, ve
scriviamo, vete, vono.

2.
Scrivevo, vi, va
scrivevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Scrisssi
 scrivesti
 scrisse
 scrivemmo
 scriveste
 scrissero.

4.
Scriverò, rai, rà
scriveremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Scrivi, va
 scriviamo, vete, vano.

6.

Scriva, va, va
 scriviamo, viate, vano.

7.
 Scriverei, resti, rebbe
 scriveremmo, reste, reb-
 bero.

8.
 Scriveffi, effi, esse
 scrivessimo, este, essero.

9.
 Scrivendo.

10.

Scritto, ta
 Scritti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
 pounds*

Sottoscrivere, to subscribe.
 Traſcrivere, to write over.

XLII. Solére, to be, wont.

1.
Soglio, fuoli, sole
 fogliamo
 folete
 solono, fogliono.

2.
Solevo, vi, va
 solevamo, vate, vano.

3. 4.
 wanting.

5.
Suoli, foglia
 fogliamo, iate, iano.

X 2

6.

6.	Soglia, a, a sogliamo, iate, iano.	6.	Seda, da, da sediamo, iate, dano.
7.	wanting.	7.	Sederei, resti, rebbe federemmo, reste, reb- bero.
8.	Soleffi, effi, esse soleffimo, este, essero.	8.	Sedessi, effi, esse sedessimo, este, essero.
9.	Solendo.	9.	Sedendo.
10.	* Solito, ta soliti, te.	10.	Seduto, ta seduti, te.
<hr/>		<hr/>	
XLIII. Sedere, <i>to sit.</i>		XLIV. Solvere, <i>to loose.</i>	
1.	Sedo, di, de sediamo, dete, dono.	1.	Solvo, vi, ve Solviamo, vete, vono.
2.	Sedevo, vi, va sedevemo, vate, vano.	2.	Solvevo, vi, va Solvevamo, vate, vano.
3.	Sedei, sedetti sedesti sedette sedemmo, deste, dettero.	3.	Solvei, solvetti solvesti solve, solvette. Solvemmo, veste, vette- ro.
4.	Sederò, rai, rà federemo, rete, ranno.	4.	Solverò, rai, rà solveremo, rete, ranno.
5.	Sedi, da sediamo, dete, dano.	5.	

Solvi, va 5.
solviamo, vete, vano.
6.

Solva, a, a
solviamo, viate, vano.

Solverei, resti, rebbe
solveremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

Solvesti, essi, esse
solvestimo, este, essero.

Solvendo. 9.
10.

Soluto, ta
soluti, te.

**XLV. Scegliere, to
choose.**

1.
Scelgo, sceglio
scegli, scegli
sceglie, sceglie
scegliamo
scegliete
scelgono.

2.
Scaglievo, vi, va
scaglievamo, vate, vano.

3.
Scelsi
scegliesti
scelse
scegliemmo
sceglieste
scelsero.

4.
Sceglierò, rai, rà
sceglieremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Scegli, scelga
scegliamo, iete, ano.

6.
Scelga, a, a
scegliamo, iate, ano.

7.
Sceglierai, resti, rebbe
sceglieremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.
Scegliesti, essi, esse
scegliestimo, este, essero.

9.
Scegliendo.

10.
Scelto, scegliuto, ta
Scelti, scegliuti, te

**XLVI. Tenere, to
keep.**

1.
Tengo, tieni, tiene
X 3 teniano,

teniamo, tenete, tengo-
no.

2.

Tenevo, vi, va
tenevamo, vate, vano.

3:

Tenni, tenesti, tenne
tenemmo, teneste, ten-
nero.

4.

Terro, rai, rà
terremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Tieni, tengá
teniamo, tenete, tenga-
no.

6.

Tenga, ga, ga
teniamo, iate, ngano.

7.

Terrei, resti, rebbe
terremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.

tenessi, effi, esse
tenessimo, este, effcro.

9.

Tenendo.

10.

Tenuto, ta
tenuti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds*

Trattenére, to entertain

Ritenére, to retain
Softenére, to maintain.

**XLVII. Tráhere,
trárre, to draw.**

1

Tráho, traggo
tráhi, trághi,
tráhe, trághé
trahiamo, traghiamo
trahete, traghete
trahono, trahgono.

2.

Tráhevo, vi, va
trahévamo, vate, vano:

3.

Trássi, tráhesti, trásse
trahemmo, hesté, trásse-
ro.

4.

Tráherò, rai, rà
traheremmo, rete, ran-
ano:

5.

Tráhi, tráha, trágga
trahiamo, trahete, trágg-
no.

6.

Trága, ga, ga
trahiamo, hiate, trágg-
no.

7.

7.
Trarrei, resti, rebbe
trarremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.
Traheffi, effi, esse
trahessimo, este, essero.

9.
Trahendo.
10.

tratto, ta
tratti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pound.*

Attrarre, *to attract*
Distrarre, *to withdraw*
Ritrarre, *to retire*,
Sottrarre, *to subtract*.

XLVIII. Valére, *to be worth.*

1.
Vaglio, vali, vale
vagliamo, valete, vagli-
ono.

2.
Valevo, vi, va
valevamo, vatc, vano.

3.
Valfi, valefti, valse
valemmo, valeste, valse-
ro.

4.
Valerò, rai, rà
valeremo, rete, ranne.

5.
Vali, vaglia
vagliamo, vale, vag-
liano.

6.
Vaglia, a, a
vagliamo, iate, iano.

7.
Valerei, resti, rebbe
valeremmo, reste reb-
bero.

8.
Valeffi, effi, esse
valessimo, este, essero.

9.
Valendo.
10.
Valuto, ta
vahuti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds*
Prevalére, *to prevail*
Rivalére, *to recover health.*

XLIX.

XLIX. Vedére, to see.

1.

Vedo, di, de
vediamo, dete, dono.

2.

Vedevo, vi, va
vedevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Viddi, vedesti, vidde
vedemmo, vedeste, vid-
dero.

4.

Vederò, vedrò, rai, rà
vederemo, rete, ranno.

5.

Vedi, veda
vediamo, vedete, veda-
no.

6.

Veda, a, a
vediamo, diate, dano.

7.

Vederei, resti, rebbe
vederemmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.

Vedessi, essi, esse
vedessimo, este, esse-
ro.

9.

Vedendo.

10.

Visto, veduto, ta
visti, veduti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds*

Avedére, to perceive.

Provedére, to provide

Rivedére, to review

Sprovedére, to unprovide.

L. Vivere, to live.

1.

Vivo, vi, ve
viviamo, vete, vono.

2.

Vivevo, vi, va
vivevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Vissi, vivesti, visse
vivemmo, veste, vissero.

4.

Viverò, rai, rà
viveremmo, rete, ranno.

5.

Vivi, viva
viviamo, vivete, vivano.

6.

Viva, a, a
viviamo, viate, vivano.

7.

Viverei, resti, rebbe
viveremmo,

[239]

viveremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.

Viveſſi, eſſi, eſſe
viveſſimo, eſte, eſſero.

9.

Vivendo.

10.

Viſſuto, ta
viſſuti, te.

LI. *Vincere, to con-
quer.*

Vinco, ci, ce

Vinciamo, cete, cono.

2.

Vincevo, vi, va
vincevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Vinſi, cesti, vinſe
vincemmo, cete, ſero.

4.

Vincerò, rai, rà
vinceremo, rete, ranno,

5.

Vinci, ca
vinciamo, cete, cano.

6.

Vinca, a, a
vinciamo, ciate, cano.

7.

Vincerei, reſti, rebbe

vinceremmo, reſte, reb-
bero.

8.

Vinceſſi, eſſi, eſſe
vinceſſimo, eſte, eſſe-
ro.

9.

Vincendo.

10.

Vinto, ta
Vinti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pound.*

Convincere, to overcome.

LII. *Volére, to be
willing.*

1.

Voglio, vuoi, vuole
vogliamo, volete, vog-
liono.

2.

Volevo, vi, va
volevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Volli, voletti, volle
volemmo, voleteſte, vol-
lero.

4.

Vorrò, rai, rà
vorembo, rete, ranno.

5.

5.
wanting.

6.

Voglia, a, a
vogliamo, iate, iano.

7.

Vorrei, resti, rebbe
vorremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.

Volessi, effi, esse
volessimo, este, essero.

9.

Volendo.

10.

Voluto, ta
voluti, te.

LIII. *Volgere, to
turn.*

1.

Volgo, gi, ge
volgiamo, gete, gono.

2.

Volgevo, vi, va
volgevemo, vate, vano.

3.

Volgi, volgesti, volse

volgemmo, volgeste,
volsero.

4.

Volgerò, rai, rà
volgeremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Volgi, ga,
volgiamo, gete, gano.

6.

Volga, a, a
volgiamo, giate, gano.

7.

Volgerei, resti, rebbe
volgeremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.

Volgessi, effi, esse
volgesimo, este, esse-
ro.

9.

Volgendo.

10.

Volto, ta
volti, te.*In like manner, its com-
pound*Revolgere, *to return.*

Irregular

Irregular V E R B S,
Of the FOURTH CONJUGATION, in *ire*.

I. *Abolire, to abolish.*

Abbolisco , ifci, ifce	1.	abbolissimo, ifte, iffero.
abboliamo , ite, ifcono.		9. Abbolendo.
Abbolivo , vi, va	2.	Abbolito , ta
abbolivamo , vate, vano.		10. aboliti, te.
Abbolii , listi, boli	3.	<i>In like manner are declined.</i>
abbolimmo , liste, liro-		Abborrire , to abbor
no.		Bollire , to boil. &c.
Abbolirò , rai, rà	4.	
abboliremo , rete, ranno.		
Abbolisci , ca	5.	II. Aprire, to open.
abboliamo , lite, liscano.		1.
Abbolisca , ca, ca	6.	Apro , apri, apre
abboliamo , iate, ifcano		apriamo , aprite, aprono.
Abbolirei , resti, rebbe	7.	2.
abboliremmo , reste, reb-		Aprivo , vi, va
bero.		aprivamo , vate, vano.
Abbolissi , ifsi, ifse	8.	3.
		Aprii , aperfi
		apristi.
		Apri , aperse
		aprimmo , apriste
		aprirono ,

aprirono, apersero.

4.

Aprirò, rai, rà

apriremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Apri, apra

apriamo, aprite, aprano.

6.

Apra, a, a

apriamo, ate, iano.

7.

Aprirei, resti, rebbe

apriremmo, reste, rebbe-
ro.

8.

Aprissi, issi, isse

aprissimo, iste, issero.

9.

Aprendo.

10.

Aperto, ta

Aperti, te:

III. Apparire, *to appear.*

I.

Apparisco, isci, isce

appariamo, rite, iscono:

2.

Apparivo, vi, va

apparivamo, vate, vano.

3.

Apparii, apperfi

apparisti

appari, aparsé

apparimmo

appariste

apparino, apparsero.

4.

Apparirò, rai, rà

apparemo, rete, ranno:

5.

Apparisci, sca

appariamo, rite, risca-
no.

6.

Apparisca, ca, ca

appariamo, riate, risca-
no.

7.

Apparirei, resti, rebbe

apparessimo, iste, issero.

8.

Apparissi, issi, isse

aprissimo, iste, issero.

9.

Apparendo.

10.

Apparso, a

apparsì, e.

IV.

IV. *Bianchire, to whiten.*

1.
Bianchisco, *isci, isce*
bianchisciamo, *chite,*
chiscono.

2.
Bianchivo, *vi, va*
bianchevamo, *vate, va-*
no.

3.
Bianchii, *chisti, chi*
bianchimmo, *chiste, chi-*
rono.

4.
Bianchirò, *rai, rà*
biancheremo, *rete, ran-*
no.

5.
Bianchisci, *ca*
bianchisciamo, *chite,*
chiscano.

6.
Bianchisca, *ca, ca*
bianchisciamo, *ciate, chi-*
ciano.

7.
Bianchirei, *resti, rebbe*
biancheremmo, *reste,*
rebbero.

8.
Bianchissi, *issi, isse*

bianchissimo, *iste, isse-*
ro.

9.
Bianchendo.

10.
Bianchito, *ta*
bianchite, *ti.*

V. *Capire, to take.*

1.
Capisco, *ci, ce*
capiamo, *pite, capi-*
cono.

2.
Capivo, *vi, va*
capiamo, *vate, vano.*

3.
Capii, *pisti, pi*
capimmo, *piste, piro-*
no.

4.
Capiò, *rai, rà*
capiremo, *rete, ranno.*

5.
Capisci, *ca*
capimo, *pite, piscano.*

6.
Capisca, *ca, ca*
capiamo, *piate, piscano.*

7.
Capirei, *resti, rebbe*
Y capi-

capiremmo, rest, reb- bero.	5.	Di, dica diciamo, dite, dicano.
Capissi, issi, isse capissimo, iste, issero.	6.	Dici, ca, ca diciamo, dicate, dicano.
Capendo.	7.	direi, resti, rebbe diremmo, reste, rebbe- ro.
Capito, ta	8.	Dicessi, essi, esse dicessimo, este, essero.
Capiti, te.	9.	Dicendo.
<i>In like manner, its com- pound</i>	10.	Detto, ta detti, te.
Concepire, to conceive. <i>Also,</i> Patire, to suffer Compire, to accomplish, &c.		<i>In like manner, its com- pounds</i>
<hr/>		Contradire, to contradict
Dico, dici, dice diciamo, dite, dicono.	1.	Ridire, to repeat Maledire, to curse, &c.
Dicevo, vi, va dicevamo, vate, vano.	2.	<hr/>
Dissi, dicesti, disse dicemmo, diceste, disse- ro.	3.	VII. Esseguire, to execute.
Ditò rai, rà dicemmo, rate, ranno.	4.	1. Essegisco, ci, ce esseguiamo, guite, guis- cano.
		2. Esseguivo, vi, va esseguvia-

esseguiamo, vate, vano.

3.

Esseguii, guisti, gui-

esseguimmo, guiste, gui-
rono.

4.

Esseguiò, rai, rà

esseguiremo, rete, ran-
no.

5.

Esseguisca, ca

esseguiamo, guite, guis-
cano.

6.

Esseguisca, ca, ca

esseguiamo, guiate, guis-
cano.

7.

Esseguirei, reste, rebbe

esseguiremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.

Esseguissi, issi, esse

esseguissimo, iste, isse-
ro.

9.

Esseguedo.

10.

Esseguito, ta

esseguiti, te.

VIII. Gire, or Gir, to go.

Note, *there be only the
following Tenses and
Persons of this Verb in
use.*

1.

Gite, *you go.*

2.

Givo, vi, va, or *gia*
givamo, vate, vano.

3.

Gii, gisti, gi, or *gia*
gimmo, giste, girono.

4.

Girò, rai, rà
giremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Gite, *go you.*

8.

Gissi, gissi, gisse
gissimo, giste, gisero.

10.

Gito.

IX. Morire, to dye.

1.

Moro, mucio

mori

Y 2

morc

more,
 moriamo, muoiamo
 morite
 morono, muoiono.
 2.
 Morivo, vi, va
 morivamo, ate, ano.
 3.
 Morii, iſſi, mori
 morimmo, riste, iſſo-
 no.
 4.
 Morirò, rai, rà
 moriremo, rete, ranno.
 5.
 Mori, mora
 moriamo, rite, rano.
 6.
 Mora, ra, ra
 moriamo, riate, rano.
 7.
 Morirei, resti, rebbe
 moriremmo, reste, reb-
 bero.
 8.
 Morissi, iſſi, iſſe
 morissimo, iſte, iſſero.
 9.
 Morendo.
 10.
 Morto, ta
 morti, te.

X. Offerire, *to offer.*
 1.
 Offerisco, ci, ce
 offeriamo, rite, riscono.
 2.
 Offerivo, vi, va
 offerivamo, vate, vano.
 3.
 Offerii, offersi,
 offeristi
 offesi, offerſe
 offerrimmo
 offeriſte
 offerirono, offerſero.
 4.
 Offerirò, rai, rà
 offeremo, rete, ranno.
 5.
 Offerisci, ſca
 offerriamo, riate, iſſano.
 6.
 Offerisca, ca, ca
 offeriamo, riate, iſſano.
 7.
 Offerirei, resti, rebbe
 offeriremmo, reste, reb-
 bero.
 8.
 Offerissi, iſſi, iſſe.
 offerissimo, iſte, iſſero.
 9.
 Offerendo.
 10.

10.
Offerto, ta
offerti, te.

*In like manner,
Ferire, to strike
and its compounds
proferire, to proffer
Preferire, to prefer
Soffrire, to suffer.*

XI. Salire, *to leap.*

1.
Salgo, saglio
sali, le
sagliamo
salite
salgono, sogliono.

2.
Salivo, vi, va
salivamo, vate, vano.

3.
Salii, salsi
salisti
sali, false
salimmo
saliste
salirono, salsero.

4.
Salirò, rai, rà
saliremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Sali

salga, saglia
sagliamo
salite
salgano.

6.
Salga, saglia
salga, ga
sagliamo, liate, gano.

7.
Salirei, resti, rebbe
saliremmo, resto, reb-
bero.

8.
Salissi, issi, isse
salissimo, iste, issero.

9.
Salendo.

10.
Salito, ta
saliti, te.

XII. Spedire, *to
dispatch.*

1.
Spedisco, sci, sce
spediamo, dite, scono.

2.
Spedivo, vi, vi
spedivamo, vate, vano.

3.
Spedii, disti, di
spedimmo, diste, diro-
no.

4.

4.	Spedirò, rai, rà spediremo, rete, ranno.	3.	Udii, udisti, udi udimmo, udiste, udi- rono.
5.	Spedisci, sca spediamo, dite, dano.	4.	Udirò, rai, rà udiremo, rete. ranno.
6.	Spedisca, sca, sca spediamo, diate, dano.	5.	Odi, oda udiamo, udite, odano:
7.	Spedirei, resti, rebbe spediremmo, reste, reb- bero.	6.	Oda, oda, oda udiamo, diate, odano.
8.	Spedissi, issi, isse spedissimo, iste, issero.	7.	Udirei, resti, rebbe udiremmo, reste, reb- bero.
9.	Spedendo.	8.	Udissi, issi, isse udissimo, iste, issero.
10.	Spedito, ta spediti, te.	9.	Udendo.
<hr/>		10.	Udito, ta udit, te
XIII. Udire, to bear.		<hr/>	
1.	Odo, odi, ode udiamo, udite, odono.	XIV. Venire, to come.	
2.	Udivo, vi, va udivamo, vate, vano.	1.	Vengo vieni, vienne
			veniamo,

veniamo, vehite, ven-
gono.

2.

Venivo, vi, va
venivamo, vate, vano.

3.

Venni, venisti, venne-
venimmo, niste, nero.

4.

Verrò, rai, rà
verremo, rete, ranno:

5.

Vieni, venga
veniamo, nite, vengano.

6.

Venga, ga, ga
veniamo, iate, gano.

7.

Verrei, resti, rebbe
verremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.

Venissi, issi, isse
venissimo, iste, issero.

9.

Venendo.

10.

Venuto, ta
Venuti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds*

Rivenire, to return.
Convenire, to meet.

**XVI. Uscire, to go
out.**

1.

Uscio, esci, esce
usciamo, uscite, escono.

2.

Uscivo, vi, va
uscivamo, vate, vano.

3.

Uscii, uscisti, usci
uscimmo, usciste, usci-
rono.

4.

Uscirò, rai, rà
usciremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Esco, esca
usciamo, uscite, escano.

6.

Esca, ca, ca
usciamo, iate, escano.

7.

Uscirei, resti, rebbe
uscirem-

Learner to make Compositions, and to read the best Authors, by which he will reap great Profit and Improvement in his Studies, both which I wish him sincerely.

Aminta, Tirsi.

A MINTA, *Hò visto
al pianto mio
Risponder per pietate i sa-
ffi, e l' onde.
E soffrirar le fronde
Hò visto al pianto mio:
Mà non hò visto mai,
Ne spero di vedere
Compassion ne la crudele, e
bella,
Che non sò s'io la chiami ò
Donna, ò fera;
Mà nega d'esser Donna,
Poiche nega pietate
A chi non la negara
Le cose inanimate.*

Tirsi, *Pasce l' Agna l'her-
bette, il Lupo l' Agne;
Mà il crudo Amor di la-
grime si pasce,
Ne se ne mostra mai satollo.*

Am. *Abi lasso!
Ch' Amor satollo è del mio
pianto homai,
E solo hà sete del mio sangue,
e tosto*

Aminta. Thyrsis.

A MINTA. I have seen the Rocks and Waters compassionately reply to my Complaints, I have seen the Woods accompany my Complaints with sighs: but I have never seen nor hope to see Compassion in the cruel Fair, whom I know not whether to call Woman or Brute; but she denies herself to be a Woman, because she denies Compassion, where inanimate things have not denied it.

Thyr. The Lamb feeds on the Grass, the Wolf on the Lambs; but cruel Love feeds on Tears, and never shews himself satisfied.

Am. Alas ! Love is long since satisfied with my Tears, and now only thirsts after my Blood; and soon am I resolved, that

*Voglio, ch'egli, e quest'
empia il sangue mio
Bèvan' con gl'occhi.*

*Tirsi, Abi Aminta! abi
Aminta,
Cbe pàrlì? ò che vaneggi?
hor ti conforta,
Ch' un' altra troverai, se
ti disprezza
Questa crudele.*

*Am. Ohime! come pos'sio
Altri trovar, se me trovar
non posso?
Se perduto bò me stesso,
quale acquisto*

Faro mai, che mi piaccia?

*Tir. O miserello,
Non disperar, ch'acquistere-
rai costei.*

*La lunga estate insegnà
al huom di porre
Freno à i leoni, ed à le
tigri Hircane.*

*Am. Mà il misero non
puoté à la sua morte
Indugio sostener di lungo
tempo.*

*Tir. Sarà corto l'indugio:
In breve spatio s'adira,
e in breve spatio anco si
placa
Femina, cosa mobil per
natura,*

that he, and that cruel
Creature, shall drink my
Blood with their Eyes.

*Thyr. Ah Aminta!
Aminta, what are you
talking? or why do you
ravethus? comfort your-
self now, for you will
find another, if this
cruel one disdains you.*

*Am. Alas! how can
I find another, if I can-
not find my self? if I
have lost my self, what
Acquisition shall I ever
make that can please me?*

*Thyr. Poor Man, ne-
ver despair of gaining
her. Length of Time
has taught Men to rein
the Lions, and the
Tygers of Arcania.*

*Am. But an unhappy
Wretch can't a long
time sustain the Delay of
his Death.*

*Thyr. The Delay will
be short: Woman is soon
angry, and soonappeas'd,
a Creature moveable by
Nature, more than the
slender*

*Più che fraschetta el vento,
 e più che cima
 Di pieghevole spica; mà, ti
 prego
 Fa, ch'io sappia più a
 dentro de la tua
 Dura condizione, e de l'
 amore:
 Che se ben confessato m'hai
 più volte
 D'amare, mi tacesti però
 dove
 Fosse posto l'amore, ed è
 ben degna
 La fedele amicitia, ed il
 commune
 Studio de le Muse, ch'a me
 scuopra
 Cio ch' à gli altri si cela.
 Am. Io son contento
 Tirsi, à te dir ciò, che le
 selve, e i monti,
 E i fiumi fanno, e gli
 buomini non fanno:
 Ch'io sono homai si proffimo
 à la morte,
 Ch' è ben ragion, ch'io
 lasci, chi radica
 La cagion del morire, e
 che l' incida
 Ne la scorsa d'un faggio,
 presso il luogo,
 Dove sara sepolto il corpo
 esaugue:*

slender Twig, or the
 pliant Ear of Corn before
 the Wind: but prithee, let
 me know something far-
 ther of thy hard Condi-
 tion, and thy Love: For
 though you have often
 confess to me that you
 was in Love, yet you
 never told me where you
 plac'd your Love: and
 our faithful Friendship,
 and our common study
 of the Muses, deserves,
 that what is conceal'd
 from others, should be
 discover'd to me.

*Am. I am content,
 Thyrsis, to tell you that,
 which the Woods, the
 Mountains, and the Ri-
 vers know, though 'tis
 unknown to Men: for I
 am now so near to Death,
 that there is good Reafon
 that I shou'd leave one
 behind who may relate
 the Cause of my Death,
 and engrave it on the
 Bark of a Beech-tree,
 near the place where my
 dead Body shall be buried.*

Si che tal hor passondovi
 quell' empia,
 Si goda di calcar l' osso in-
 felici
 Co'l piè superbo, e trà se
 dica, E questo
 Pur mio trionfo ; e goda
 di vedere.
 Che nota sia la sua vittoria
 à tutti
 Li pastori paesani, e pelle-
 grini,
 Che quivi il caso guidi, e
 forse (abi, spero
 Troppo alte cose) un giorno
 effer potrebbe,
 Ch' ella, commossa da tarda
 pietate,
 Piangesse morto, chi già
 vivo uccise ;
 Dicendo, O pur qui fosse,
 e fosse mio ! Hor odi.
 Tirsi, Segui pur, ch' io
 bent' ascolto,
 E forse à miglior fin, che
 tu non pensi.
 Am. Essendo io fanciullet-
 to, sì che à pena
 Giunger potea con la man
 pargoletta
 A corre i frutti da i piega-
 ti rami
 De già arboscelli, intrinseco
 divenni

that the cruel Maid when
 she passes by, may take
 delight to trample my
 unhappy Bones with her
 proud Foot, and say
 within herself, here lies
 my Triumph ; and may
 rejoice to see, that her
 Victory is known to all
 Country Shepherds, and
 the Strangers, whom
 chance directs this way :
 and perhaps (alas my
 Hopes are too high) a
 Day may come, when
 she, being mov'd with
 too late a Pity, may la-
 ment him dead, whom
 living she kill'd ; and say ;
 oh ! were he here, and
 where he mine ! Attend
 now.

Thyr. Go on then, for
 I am attentive, and per-
 haps to better Purpose,
 than you imagine.

Am. While I was yet
 so young, that I could
 scarce reach with my
 little Hand to gather
 fruit from the bending
 Boughs of the young
 Trees, I became ac-
 quainted

*De la più vaga, e cara
 Verginella,
 Che mai spiegasse al vento
 chioma d'oro :
 La figliuola conosci di Ci-
 dippe,
 E di Montan ricchissimo
 d'armenti ?
 Silvia, honor de le selve,
 ardor de l'alme,
 Di questa parlo, abi lasso !
 vissi à questa
 Così unito alcun tempo,
 che frà due
 Tortorelle più fida compag-
 nia
 Non farà mai, nè fue.
 Congiunti eran gli alberghi,
 Mā più congiunti i cori :
 Conforme era l'etate,
 Mā'l pensier più conforme :
 Secò tendeva infidie con le
 reti
 A i pesci, ed à gli augelli,
 e seguitava
 I cervi feco, e le veloci
 dame ;
 E'l diletto, e la preda era
 commune,
 Mā, mentre io fea rapina
 d'animali,
 Fui, non sò come, à me
 stesso rapito.*

quainted with the most
 beautiful and dearest
 Maid, that e'er display'd
 her golden Hair to the
 Wind : know you the
 Daughter of *Cidippa*, and
 and of *Montanus*, so
 wealthy in Cattle? *Sylvia*,
 the Honour of the
 Woods, the Passion of
 Souls ; of her I speak,
 Alas ! I liv'd with her
 so united for some
 time, that between two
 Turtles there never will
 be, nor ever was a more
 faithful Alliance. Ad-
 joining were our Habita-
 tions, but more adjoin-
 ing our Hearts : alike
 were our Ages, but our
 Thoughts more alike :
 With her I us'd to spread
 the ensnaring Net for
 Fishes, and for Birds,
 and follow'd with her
 the Stags and swift Does ;
 both our Diversion and
 our Prey was common.
 But whilst I was making
 a Prey of Animals, I be-
 came, I know not how,
 a Prey my self. By little
 and

*A poco à poco nacque nel
 mio petto,
 Non sò da qual radice,
 Com'herba fuo, che per se
 stessa germini,
 Un'incognito affetto,
 Che mi fea desiare
 D'esser sempre presente
 A la mia bella Silvia,
 E bevea da' suoi lumi
 Un' estranea dolcezza,
 Che lasciava nel fine
 Un non sò che d' amaro :
 Sospirava sovente, e non
 sapeva
 La cagion de' sospiri.
 Così fui prima Amante,
 ch' intendessi
 Che cosa fosse Amore.
 Ben me n'accorsi al fin.*

and little there grew within my Breast, I know not from what Root, like an Herb that shoots out of it self, a Passion I was unacquainted with before, which made me desire to be always in the Presence of my fair *Sylvia*, and I drank from her Eyes a strange Sweetness, which left behind it in the end I know not what kind of Bitter: I sigh'd often, and knew not the cause of my sighing. Thus I became a Lover, before I understood what kind of thing Love was. Too well I found what it was at last !

An INDEX to the RULES.

A or *an* before a Noun, *Absut*, before a Participle in *ing*, c. 5. r. 25.
a. 5. r. 11.
A or *an* before parts of time, *Absut*, *concerning*, c. 5. r. 26.
measures, &c. c. 1. r. 6.
As, *as*, c. 5. r. 9.
As far as, c. 5. r. 46.
At, before Substantives, c. 1. r. 19.
At, *at the* before *bonje*, *at home*, c. 5. r. 8.
At night, *at noon*, c. 1. r. 23.
Age, c. 5. r. 17.
Am, and its Tenses before *bot*, *cold*, *hungry*, &c. c. 4. r. 8.
Am, and its Tenses before an Infinitive, c. 5. r. 48.
All over, c. 5. r. 63.
All, or *every*, c. 5. r. 41.
A great deal of, c. 5. r. 34.
A little of, *ibid.*
After that, c. 5. r. 48.
Any, before Substantives, c. 1. r. 10.
Any, with a Verb, c. 3. r. 16.
About, before the word *clock*, c. 5. r. 20, 21.
About, *round about*, c. 5. r. 22.
About, for *near*, c. 5. r. 23.
About, after *am*, c. 5. r. 24.
Absut, before a Participle in *ing*, c. 5. r. 25.
Absut, *concerning*, c. 5. r. 26.
About, for *upon*, *towards*, *to* and other significations, c. 5. r. 26, 27.
Article before a Noun, c. 1. r. 1, 2.
Article not expressed after *si*, page 74.
Articles, Table of p. 52.
Article before Pronouns, *possessive*, c. 1. r. 8.
Adverbs of Quantity, c. 1. r. 15.
Adjectives of good and bad qualities, c. 1. r. 16.
—of colours, nations
&c. c. 1. r. 17. note 1.
Because, after a Negative, c. 3. r. 17.
But, with a Verb, c. 5. r. 7.
Better, c. 5. r. 15.
Before, with Verbs, c. 5. r. 18.
Being, before a Participle *common*, c. 5. r. 49.
To bring, c. 5. r. 50.
Clock, c. 5. r. 32.
Ci, *you*, c. 3. r. 14. *&c.*
Can, c. 4. r. 11.
Definite

An INDEX to the RULES. 259

Definite Tense, c. 4. r. 14.
To doubt, takes *non*, c. 5. r. 5.
Do, *does*, c. 5. r. 51.
To enjoy, c. 1. r. 13.
Ecco, takes an Article, c. 5. r. 37.
Every, or *all*, c. 5. r. 41.
From, before Substantives, c. 1. r. 10.
From, *from the*, before Pronouns and proper Names, c. 1. r. 18.
To fear, takes *non*, c. 5. r. 5.
From, before *house*, *from biome*, c. 5. r. 8.
From, before a Participle in *ing*, c. 5. r. 52.
From whom, *from whitch*, *ibid.*
To go, c. 4. r. 9.—c. 5. r. 38.
Good, c. 5. r. 30.
Gerunds takes an Article, c. 5. r. 37.
Gli takes *e* after it, p. 78.
He who, *she who*, c. 3. r. 12.
He, &c. relative, *ibid.*
Him, *her*, *it*, *them*, not expressed after *si they*, c. 3. r. 13.
To have, with, a Participle common after *they*, c. 3. r. 13.
He that, c. 3. r. 17.
He is a, *she is a*, c. 4. r. 5.
To binder, takes *non*, c. 5. r. 5.
Here, c. 5. r. 36.

Having, not expressed, c. 5. r. 53.
How, note of admiration, c. 5. r. 60.
How long, c. 5. r. 16.
How old, c. 5. r. 56.
House, c. 5. r. 8.
It, and *Pronouns* in a question, c. 3. r. 4.
It is, before *weather*, c. 4. r. 7.
It is, *it was*, *it has been*, c. 4. r. 4.
If, the Tense it governs, c. 5. r. 29.
In, before a Participle in *ing*, c. 4. r. 20.
In, before Nouns of number and Numerals, c. 4. r. 21.
In, *into*, after Verbs of motion and rest, c. 5. r. 28.—after the Future Tense, *ibid.*
Into, before Kingdoms, &c. c. 1. r. 21.
In the; before parts of time, c. 1. r. 7.
In the, in comparison, c. 1. r. 12.
In the, *into the*; c. 1. r. 20.
In my, *in thy*, *in his* &c. c. 5. r. 40.
To be ill, c. 5. r. 47.
Just now, c. 5. r. 14.
Indefinite Tense, turned by *bave*, or *am*, c. 4. r. 15.

Infinitives

260 An INDEX to the RULES.

Infinitives take *to*, *la*, *li*,
&c. after them, c. 5. r. 1.
37. c. 3. r. 2.

Infinitive Mood used in
forbidding, c. 5. r. 39.

To know, c. 4. r. 28.

Long, c. 5. r. 16.

Like, c. 5. r. 45.

Long of, c. 5. r. 46.

To live, c. 5. r. 61.

Little of, c. 5. r. 34.

Me some, be some, him some,
&c. or *of it*, p. 29. 79.

My, thy, his, her, &c. before
a part of the body and
word *mind*, c. 4. r. 2.

May, or can, c. 4. r. 11.

Might, c. 4. r. 13.

More, more of, c. 5. r. 48.

More than, *ibid.*

Much, in comparison, c. 5.
r. 44.

Must, c. 5. r. 64.

In that manner, c. 5. r. 49.

In my, in thy, in his, in her,
c. 5. r. 40.

Names of rivers, mountains,
and kingdoms take an
article, c. 1. r. 3.

Names of dignity and office,
take no article, c. 1. r. 4, 5.

Nouns of number, c. 1.
r. 24.

Negative not, at the begin-
ing, c. 3. r. 1. 2. 4.

Noun repeated, c. 3. r. 14.

No, a Pronoun, c. 3. r. 14.
&c.

Negatives, *not*, *nothing*,
never, *ne-body*, c. 5. r. 1.

Not, no, alone, c. 5. r. 2.

Never, beginning the sen-
tence, c. 5. r. 3.

Negatives not expressed
double, c. 5. r. 4.

Non, in comparison before
the verb, c. 5. r. 6.

Noun in a question, c. 4.
r. 23.

Near, vide about.

At night, noon, c. 1. r. 23.

Noun Substantives take an
article, c. 1. r. 2.

Neuns in general, take an
article, c. 1. r. 1.

Of, before Substantives, c.
1. r. 10.

Of, of the, before Pronouns
and Prepositions, c. 1.
r. 18.

Of whom, whose, c. 3. r. 15.

Of whom, to whom, c. 3.
r. 16.

Ought, c. 4. r. 10.

Old, c. 5. r. 56.

Prepositions, c. 5. r. 18.

Preposition *a* or *ad* before
andare, and Verbs of mo-
tion, c. 5. r. 38.

Participle common put last,
c. 3. r. 5.

Participle

An INDEX to the RULES. 261

Participle common after '3. *Some*, before Substantives, c. 1. r. 10.
who, he, him, &c. c. 1. r. 6.
—ending in *ing*, turned into the Infinitive Mood, c. 4. r. 19. c. 1. r. 9.
—in *ing*, before *in*, c. 4. r. 20.
People, c. 5. r. 13.
Pronouns Personal, *vide* Table of Pronouns.
Pronoun Possessive, and absolute, c. 2. r. 1.
—Personal before the verb, c. 3. r. 1.
—after the Verb, c. 3. r. 2.
—in a question, c. 3. r. 3, 4.
Pronouns after *if they*, c. 3. r. 13. and page 79.
—*mi, si, &c.* with *they*, c. 3. r. 13.
Pronouns Conjunctive, p. 28 74.
—Conjunctive chang'd p. 29 74.
Proper Names take no article, c. 1. r. 5.
Presently, c. 5. r. 14.
Reciprocal Verbs, c. 1. r. 13. c. 4. r. 1.
—used for Verbs Passive, c. 4. r. 3.
3. if, what Mood and Tense it governs, c. 5. r. 29.

Some, before Substantives, c. 1. r. 10.
Should, c. 4. r. 12.
So, c. 5. r. 10.
Since, c. 5. r. 19.
Some, with a Verb, c. 5. r. 14.
So that, c. 5. r. 43.
Something, c. 5. r. 62.
She is a, e. 4. r. 5.
She who, c. 3. r. 12.
To stand, c. 4. r. 9.
Si they, after a Verb accented, page 76.
To be sick, c. 5. r. 47.
To, before Substantives, c. 1. r. 19.
—before Pronouns and proper Names, c. 1. r. 22.
—before Kingdoms, and the word *Town*, c. 1. r. 21.
—before an Infinitive *di*, c. 4. r. 16.
—before an Infinitive *a or da*, c. 4. r. 17.
—before an Infinitive *per*, c. 4. r. 18.
To thank, c. 1. r. 13.
That, c. 3. r. 17.
That, between Verbs c. 3. r. 8.
That, alone, *ibid.*
—turned by *who*, *whom*, *ibid.*
This, that, before Nouns, c. 3. r. 8.
This

262 An INDEX to the RULES.

This, that, in comparison, c. 3. r. 9, 10.
This, that, not in comparison c. 3. r. 11.
That whom, which, c. 3. r. 7.
They, c. 3. r. 13.
They not; ibid.
They us of it, they you of it, &c. ibid. and page 79.
They are, c. 4. r. 6.
They, whom, c. 3. r. 11. note.
There, before Verbs, c. 5. r. 57.
Than, in comparison, c. 5. r. 54.
After a Comparative, &c. c. 5. r. 55.
Thereabout, c. 5. r. 26.
This, before time of the day, c. 3. r. 8.
This day sen'night, &c. c. 5. r. 33.
Till, untill, c. 5. r. 59.
Time, c. 5. r. 12.
Verb and Noun turned by a Verb only, c. 1. r. 1
 r. 4.
Vi us, c. 3. r. 14.
Very, very much, c. 5. r. 31
Verba taken Substantively c. 5. r. 37.
Venire used for Essere, c. 3. r. 13. note.
With, with the, with my with his, &c. c. 1. r. 11.
With me, with you, with him, with us, with them. &c. ibid.
Within, c. 5. r. 28.
Within the, c. 1. r. 20.
What, which, c. 3. r. 7.
What, c. 3. r. 17.
not in a question, c. 5. r. 35.
Note of Admiration, c. 5. r. 60.
Who, or that, c. 3. r. 12.
Whose, c. 3. r. 15.
Will, c. 5. r. 58.
Whereabout, c. 5. r. 26.



F I N I S.

* * Mr. CHENEAU's Rules for the FRENCH-TONGUE are printed also for J. POTE, J. HODGES, J. and J. RIVINGTON.



